



*Meat*

*For Christians*

***Spiritual Food for Starved Christians***

*Modern slavery, Homosexuality Abortion, Euthanasia, ACLU, The EU, NAU and World Government, Global Warming Scam, The Lie of Evolution, Proof of God's Existence.*

# Meat for Christians

by  
Patrick Harrity

## Table of Contents

1	Modern slavery .....	1
2	Homosexuality .....	20
3	Abortion.....	56
4	More on Abortion .....	75
5	Euthanasia .....	106
6	The ACLU .....	117
7	The European Union, the North American Union, and World Government.....	132
8	Global Warming Scam .....	170
9	The Lie of Evolution .....	191
10	Proof of God's Existence .....	205
11	Daniel's 70-Week Prophecy.....	225
12	Receive Jesus Now! .....	227

*1 Cor 3:2, I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it...(KJV)*

*Heb 5:13-14, For every one that useth milk is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil. (KJV)*

*Isa 40:31, But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint. (KJV)*

# 1 Modern slavery

There are more slaves in the world today than in any other time in history, some 27 million, bought for an average cost of only \$90.<sup>1</sup>

The number of slaves would be equivalent to the combined populations of Austria, Hong Kong, Finland, Ireland and Botswana; or 600 Angel Stadiums crammed to capacity; or a line of people stretching from New York to California, and back.

Each is a human being of great value in the eyes of God and is living a life of wretched suffering.

Most are in India and Africa, but many languish in the gleaming cities of modern nations, including the United States, into which an estimated “14,500 to 17,500 people are trafficked...each year to be used as slaves.”<sup>2</sup>

More facts:

- Children sold into slavery will be used for child soldiers, forced labor, domestic servitude, forced marriage/bride selling, camel racing, street begging and organ harvesting; “but the vast majority will be used for sex,” including prostitution, sex tourism and pornography.<sup>3</sup>
- Human trafficking is the third largest criminal business and the fastest growing.<sup>4</sup>
- Between 100,000 and 300,000 American children with an average age of 12-14 years old are enslaved in sex trafficking *each year*.<sup>5</sup>
- The UN “estimates that at least 1.2 million children were transported for the purposes of exploitation in 2005. ... Following narcotics and weapons, the trafficking of human beings brings in annual worldwide profits ranging from 7 to 13 billion dollars.”<sup>6</sup> The actual number is probably much higher. UNICEF estimates the annual income from the

---

<sup>1</sup> [www.freetheslaves.net](http://www.freetheslaves.net).

<sup>2</sup> [www.freetheslaves.net](http://www.freetheslaves.net).

<sup>3</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), pp. vii, 2.

<sup>4</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 2, quoting U.S. Dept. of Health & Human Services.

<sup>5</sup> Mark Bergin, “Shame of the Cities,” *World Magazine*, 2/28/09.

<sup>6</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 3.

sex trafficking of children alone to be 12 billion dollars.<sup>7</sup> These figures yield an average annual income of \$10,000 per child slave. \$10,000 per year for an initial investment of only \$90. This is the most profitable crime on earth. And arguably the most evil. For what could be more evil than the slow torturing to death of the body, mind and soul of an innocent child?

*Matt 18:10, [Jesus said] Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. (KJV)*

*1 Tim 6:10, For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (KJV)*

- Unlike other merchandise, like drugs, which are sold once and used up, “one child can be sold multiple times...some children are forced to service customers 20 to 30 times a day” and 4,000 times a year.<sup>8</sup> They suffer additionally from fear, anxiety, beatings, whippings, depression, shame, guilt, insomnia, hunger, drug addiction, untreated illnesses, damage to reproductive organs, painful chafing, “sexually transmitted diseases, HIV/AIDS, pelvic pain, rectal trauma and urinary difficulties.”<sup>9</sup>

*For four years, Teary was used by five to seven men every day. In time, she contracted AIDS. The brothel owner discarded her when she became sick. She died of AIDS at the age of seventeen.<sup>10</sup>*

- “Trafficked children suffer irreparable damage to their physical and mental health. The severe risks to which they are exposed often lead to early pregnancy, forced drug addiction, AIDS and other sexually transmitted diseases, and ultimately death.”<sup>11</sup> And of course, forced abortions and severe physical beatings.

---

<sup>7</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 11.

<sup>8</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), pp. 3, 11.

<sup>9</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 147, quoting U.S. Dept. of Health & Human Services.

<sup>10</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 145, quoting U.S. State Dept.

<sup>11</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 4.

*“Some clients beat the girls with sticks, belts and chains until they bled. If the victims returned crying, they were beaten by the madam and told that they must have provoked the client.”<sup>12</sup>*

*Prov 6:16-17, These six things doth the LORD hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, (KJV)*

- In the past, when slavery was legal, slaves were very expensive. Now they are so cheap and abundant as to be nearly disposable. At \$90, their cost is less than that of a dog.

*The soreness of her genitals reminds her of the thirteen men she had sex with the night before...she ran away...she was quickly caught, dragged back, beaten and raped. That night she was forced to take on a chain of clients until the early morning. The beatings and work continued night after night until her will was broken.<sup>13</sup>*

- Children are being used to produce increasingly horrifying pornographic images, one example of which was a baby girl being raped and sodomized.<sup>14</sup> This would likely kill a baby. But depraved people pay vastly more for the pornography than what the child cost, so vast profits are made in this satanic business.
- Victims are typically lured under false pretenses such as lucrative job offers or an educational opportunity. They are then smuggled to their owners and enslaved. Corrupt government officials are bribed along the way; these officials also frustrate hopes of escape, or return escapees to their captors. Victims are also kidnapped from the streets, or sold by impoverished parents, or betrayed by migrant smugglers who turn on them, and enslave them and any children they brought with them. Their captors use fear, threats to them and their families,

---

<sup>12</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 7, quoting U.S. State Dept.

<sup>13</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 63; quoting from Free The Slaves.

<sup>14</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 53, quoting Alice Fisher's U.S. Senate testimony.

debt, rape, extreme violence and drug addiction to keep them under control.

*They used to beat me and abuse me and say, 'We have spent money on you. You must entertain customers!' ...This was even before I had reached puberty. We were never given condoms to use. Later, I got pregnant. I was forced to have sex right up to my ninth month of pregnancy. I had a daughter who only survived seven days. I had to entertain even when I had my period or if my genitals were swollen. I ran away once, but the police caught me and brought me back to the men..."<sup>15</sup>*

The Bible prescribes capital punishment for kidnapping or kidnapping and selling into slavery. Let's bring back capital punishment for these abominable crimes. The penalty of death would be a powerful deterrent.

*Exod 21:16, "Anyone who kidnaps another and either sells him or still has him when he is caught must be put to death. (NIV)*

- Women and girls as young as six are trafficked for sex.<sup>16</sup>
- "UNICEF and Free the Slaves have determined that more than 30 million children have been traded over the last three decades throughout Asian countries" alone.<sup>17</sup>
- "The International Labor Organization reported that ten to fifteen percent of the gross domestic product of Indonesia, Malaysia, the Philippines, and Thailand derives from sex tourism,"<sup>18</sup> where mostly men, usually pedophiles, travel to have sex with underage girls and boys. "In Cambodia, a virtual haven for child sex tourists, it is estimated that one-third of the prostitutes are children...around thirty thousand."<sup>19</sup> "In the Philippines, '300,000 Japanese take sex tours

---

<sup>15</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 113, quoting from Integrated Regional Information Networks.

<sup>16</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 25, quoting former Secretary of State Colin Powell.

<sup>17</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 124.

<sup>18</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 64.

<sup>19</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 65, quoting an ECPAT study and Cambodia's Minister of Women's Affairs, Mu Soc Hua.

every year.”<sup>20</sup> “In Thailand, UNICEF estimates the number of Thai children involved in prostitution is between 60,000 and 200,000.”<sup>21</sup>

*After a long, tense wait, a grinning teenage boy opens the door and shoves two young girls into the room. He says one is seven years old. The other is nine. The younger one... is sweating and breathing heavily.*<sup>22</sup>

*Sisters Naren and Sitthy, ages 10 and 12 years, lived in Phnom Penh. Their parents agreed to deliver the young girls to a German national’s rented apartment for sex in exchange for money. While at the apartment, the German man sexually abused the girls and documented the abuse on video. Tipped off by a neighbor, the girls were rescued by a non-governmental organization. They testified against the man and their parents.*<sup>23</sup>

The children are often arrested and prosecuted as criminals for prostitution instead of being treated as the victims they are. They are so brainwashed and terrified from beatings that they are often uncooperative with authorities who are trying to help. Rather than prosecute them, legal focus should be directed not on the supply but on the demand, by inflicting heavy jail sentences for those who hire prostitutes, and even harsher sentences for rape of those held against their will and statutory rape of the underage. Men should know that most prostitutes are being held against their will; consequently they are committing rape by hiring them. A penalty of 5 to 10 years in jail for hiring a prostitute would quickly dry up demand. A reduction in supply would then follow.

\* \* \*

Children are kidnapped and used as child soldiers and for sex for adult soldiers. They are forced to commit abominable atrocities, sometimes even against their own family and friends. In 2006, the worldwide number

---

<sup>20</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 125, quoting Dr. Mohamed Mattar, Executive Director of The Protection Project.

<sup>21</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 125.

<sup>22</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 155.

<sup>23</sup> U.S. Department of State, *Trafficking in Persons Report*, June 2007, p. 6.

of child soldiers was estimated at 250,000 to 300,000, one third girls, in over 30 countries.<sup>24</sup>

*We were told to kill people by forcing them to stay in their homes while we burned them down. We even had to bury some people alive. One day my friends and I were forced by our commanders to kill a family, to cut up their bodies and to eat them.*<sup>25</sup>

*It was horrible because I was only twelve years old, but I was frequently beaten and raped during the night by the other soldiers. One day, a commander wanted me to become his wife, so I tried to escape. They caught me and whipped me and raped me every night for many days.*<sup>26</sup>

Although often assigned euphemisms such as indentured servitude, bonded labor or human trafficking, let's not mince words; this is in fact the slave trading of slaves by slave traders.

\* \* \*

There are an estimated 15 million bonded child laborers in India alone.<sup>27</sup> The bonded child laborers were sold to their bond masters for money and now must endure years of grueling labor for 16-hour days to pay off their debt. The work is so punishing that many are crippled or die of sickness or exhaustion long before they pay their debt.

One child from India described the plight of his sister, an indentured servant:

*"My sister is ten years old. Every morning at seven she goes to the bonded labor man, and every night at nine she comes home. He treats her badly; he hits her if he thinks she is working slowly or if she talks to the other children, he yells at*

---

<sup>24</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 75, quoting United Nations research.

<sup>25</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 71.

<sup>26</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 79.

<sup>27</sup> Human Rights Watch, *The Small Hands of Slavery*, 1996

(<http://hrw.org/reports/1996/India3.htm>)

*her, he comes looking for her if she is sick and cannot go to work. I feel this is very difficult for her. I don't care about school or playing. I don't care about any of that. All I want is to bring my sister home from the bonded labor man. For 600 rupees I can bring her home—that is our only chance to get her back. We don't have 600 rupees . . . we will never have 600 rupees.”<sup>28</sup>*

In 2011, 600 rupees was only about 12 dollars U.S.

Another problem is that the debt of the child slave is increased over time through exorbitant expenses falsely charged to the child's account, making it impossible to pay no matter the time, effectively making it a life sentence at hard labor.

Can it be argued that it is better for these children to work, that it helps reduce poverty? No. It actually increases poverty because they are paid nothing, and this takes away jobs from adults who would be paid.

\* \* \*

The following are excerpts from an article by Kevin Sites which describe the enslavement of a four-year old child bride named Gulsoma, living in Afghanistan, who was finally rescued at age eleven after seven years of torture.<sup>29</sup>

*“When I was three years old my father died, and after a year my mother married again, but her second husband didn't want me,” says Gulsoma. “So my mother gave me away in a promise of marriage to our neighbor's oldest son, who was thirty. . . . But within a year, Gulsoma learned that so much else would be required of her that she would become a virtual slave in the household. At the age of five, she was forced to take care of not only her “husband” but also his parents and all 12 of their other children as well. Though nearly the entire family participated in the abuse, her father-in-law, she says, was the cruelest. “My father-in-law asked me to do everything — laundry, the household chores — and the only time I was able to sleep in the house was when they had guests over,” she says.*

<sup>28</sup> Human Rights Watch, *The Small Hands of Slavery*, 1996 (<http://hrw.org/reports/1996/India3.htm>)

<sup>29</sup> Kevin Sites, In the Hot Zone, *Child Bride*, March 20, 2006 (<http://hotzone.yahoo.com/b/hotzone/blogs2986>).

*"Other than that I would have to sleep outside on a piece of carpet without even any blankets. In the summer it was okay. But in the winter a neighbor would come over and give me a blanket, and sometimes some food." When she couldn't keep up with the workload, Gulsoma says, she was beaten constantly. "They beat me with electric wires," she says, "mostly on the legs. My father-in-law told his other children to do it that way so the injuries would be hidden. He said to them, 'break her bones, but don't hit her on the face.'" ... Gulsoma says the family had one boy her age, named Atiqullah, who refused to take part in her torture. "He would sneak me food sometimes and when my mother-in-law told him to find a stick to beat me, he would come back say he couldn't find one," she says. "He would try to stop the others sometimes. He would say 'she is my sister, and this is sinful.' Sometimes I think about him and wish he could be here and I wish I could have him as my brother." One evening, Gulsoma says, when her father-in-law saw the neighbor giving her food and a blanket, he took them away and beat her mercilessly. Then, she says, he locked her in a shed for two months. "I would be kept there all day," she says, "then at night they would let me go the bathroom and I would be fed one time each day. Most of the time it was only bread and sometimes some beans." She says every day she was locked in the shed, she wished and prayed that her parents would come and take her away. Then she would remember that her father was dead and her mother was gone. ...Gulsoma said when her father-in-law finally let her out of the shed, he bound her hands behind her back and beat her unconscious. She says he revived her by pouring a tea thermos filled with scalding water over her head and her back. "It was so painful," she says, dabbing her eyes with her scarf and sniffing for a moment. "I was crying and screaming the entire time." Five days later, she says, her father in law gave her a vicious beating when his daughter's wristwatch went missing. "He thought I stole it," she says, "and he beat me all over my body with his stick. He broke my arm and my foot. He said if I didn't find it by the next day, he would kill me." She crawled away that night and hid under a rickshaw. When the rickshaw driver found Gulsoma, broken and bleeding, he listened to her story and took her to the police. She was hospitalized immediately. "The doctor at the hospital who treated me said, 'I wish I could take you to the village square and show all the people what happened to you, so no one would ever do something like this again,'" Gulsoma says. It took her a full month to recover from her last beating. But the fear and psychological trauma may never go away. "I was happy to have a bed and food at the hospital," she says. "But I was thinking that when I get better they will give me back to the family." However, Gulsoma says when the police questioned the family, the father-in-law lied and tried to tell them she had epilepsy and had fallen down and hurt herself. But the neighbor who had helped Gulsoma confirmed the story of her beatings and torture. The police arrested her father-in-law and "husband." ..."Everyone was crying when they heard my story," Gulsoma says. ...She takes off her baseball*

*cap and shows us a bald spot... on the crown of her head where she was scalded. She then turns her back and raises her shirt to reveal a sad map of scar tissue and keloids from cuts, bruises and the boiling water. ..."I feel better now," she says. "I have friends at the orphanage. But every night I'm still afraid the family will come here and pick me up." Gulsoma also says that when the sun goes down, she sometimes begins to shiver involuntarily — a reaction to the seven years of sleeping outdoors, sometimes in the bitter cold of the desert night. She says she believes there are other girls like her in Kandahar, maybe elsewhere in Afghanistan, and that she wants to study human rights and one day go back to help them. As we walk outside to take some pictures, I ask her if, after all she's been through, she thinks it will be harder to trust, to believe that there are actually good people in the world. "No," she says, quickly. "I didn't expect anyone would help me but God. I was really surprised that there were also nice people: the neighbor, the rickshaw driver, the police," she says. "I pray for those who helped release me." Looking directly into the camera, she smiles... "I think that all people are good people," she says, "except for those that hurt me."*

Even this evil father-in-law can be saved if he repents of his evil and receives Jesus Christ as his Lord. I pray with the love of Christ that he does. He will be a new creature in Christ if he does, the old will have passed away.

But if not, to him will be reserved the blackness of darkness for ever, in hell where the worm dies not and the fire is never quenched; a furnace of fire, where there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth, where the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever and they have no rest day or night (Jude 1:13, Mark 9:43-44, Matt 13:42, Rev 14:11). If he doesn't repent, truly, it would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck and he were cast into the sea (Mark 9:42); indeed, better if he had never been born, as Jesus Christ said of Judas (Matt 26:24).

I would like to commend the boy Atiqullah who tried to defend Gulsoma and take a stand against the evils of his family. I pray he finds salvation and blessing in our Lord Jesus Christ, if he has not already. And the police deserve commendation for helping Gulsoma; so often corrupt police just return escaped victims to their abusers. And the rickshaw driver. The neighbor helped too, but couldn't he have reported these brutalities sooner?

*Luke 10:25-28, And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him [Jesus], saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. (KJV)*

What about you? Will you help?<sup>30</sup>

*“All that is necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing.” Attributed to Edmund Burke.*

Former congresswoman Linda Smith of Shared Hope International (SHI) tells of the incident which inspired her to found SHI and fight against human trafficking.<sup>31</sup> She was in Bombay, India, travelling along a road filled with filthy brothels when she locked eyes with a 13-year old girl. “It was as if God whispered in my ear, ‘Touch her for me.’” She stopped and approached the girl and placed a loving hand on her shoulder, and the child collapsed into her arms.

\* \* \*

The Book of Revelation describes the burning of an opulent and decadent city called Babylon during the times of the end. In it are described the merchants who became rich by the selling of the bodies and souls of men, women and children to those who lusted after them.

*Rev 18:9-21, And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall*

---

<sup>30</sup> **Organizations to which you can donate to free slaves include**

- Free the Slaves <http://www.freetheslaves.net/Page.aspx?pid=183>
- Ahava Kids <http://www.ahavakids.org/>
- Project Rescue <http://www.projectrescue.com/>
- Christian Solidarity International <http://www.csi-int.org/>
- Make Way Partners <http://www.makewaypartners.org/> and
- Shared Hope International <http://www.sharedhope.org/>

<sup>31</sup> Mark Bergin, “Shame of the Cities,” World Magazine, 2/28/09.

*bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come. And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more: The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all. The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city! And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate. Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her. And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. (KJV)*

This Babylon, where slavery thrives, will be thrown down like a great millstone being cast into the sea. These words recall the words of Jesus Christ who described the affliction due them who cause the souls of children to stumble:

*Matt 18:6, [Jesus said] But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Woe unto the world*

*because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!  
(KJV)*

And what could possibly be more offensive than the buying and selling of innocent children by perverse and wicked hands and malevolent faces in dark, horrific places, to be abused until their little bodies are used up and their souls are dried up and they are discarded broken as refuse.

\* \* \*

A few more facts and then we'll close this difficult chapter:

- Organ harvesting from human slaves is also particularly gruesome. As of September 15, 2006, there were 92,902 people waiting for an organ donation in the United States where, in 2005, approximately 17 a day died while waiting.<sup>32</sup> In China, minutes before their execution, condemned prisoners are surgically prepped for the sole purpose of harvesting their organs.<sup>33</sup>

*Police in Russia discovered a grandmother trying to sell her five-year old grandson for his organs. Five year old Andrei was sold for \$90,000 in an operation that stunned police...*<sup>34</sup>

- Child slave labor is a great atrocity perpetrated on a monumental scale. "According to the International Labor Organization (ILO), an estimated 246 million children are engaged in exploitive child labor worldwide... The U.S. State Department's 2006 *Trafficking in Persons* Report listed 150 countries to be 'a source destination or transit country for trafficking of slaves.' Almost three quarters of them work in hazardous environments such as mines or factories, or with dangerous substances such as chemicals and agricultural pesticides."<sup>35</sup>

*"Their tiny spines already deformed like old men and women, their tender hands arthritic and calloused from their*

---

<sup>32</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 82, quoting the United Network for Organ Sharing.

<sup>33</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 85.

<sup>34</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 81, quoting CNN.

<sup>35</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 94.

*downtrodden labor, their lungs plagued by respiratory illnesses in poorly ventilated shops, the children are exploited in numerous physically, emotionally, and mentally exhaustive ways. Children who do not make their quota are beaten or thrown away.*<sup>36</sup>

- “In the mid 1990s, there were some three thousand *maquiladoras* [Mexican assembly companies] located in northern Mexico employing over one million Mexicans in low-paying, assembly sweatshops. Today, even Mexican labor is not cheap enough for international corporations. According to the Federal Reserve Bank of Dallas, the *maquiladoras* activity is down over 25 percent from its peak, as international corporations have found even cheaper labor in China.”<sup>37</sup>
- There are over 1,000 Chinese slave-labor prison camps (called *Laogai*) in China, containing several million inmates.<sup>38</sup> The prisoners work long, grueling hours without pay, live in brutal conditions, are subjected to torture and beatings, and are often victims of organ harvesting. The merchandise produced by these hellish forced-labor camps is shipped throughout the world. Chances are very high you have purchased something from China made by slaves suffering horribly and living in concentration-camp conditions. Besides the *Laogai*, many more millions in China languish in near-slave conditions, where long hours, very low pay and appalling work conditions prevail.
- “Ninety percent of West African cocoa plantations have slaves, meaning two-fifths of the world’s cocoa is derived from slavery.”<sup>39</sup> “Approximately 286,000 children between the ages of nine and twelve work on cocoa farms on the Cote D’Ivoire alone, many as a result of child trafficking.”<sup>40</sup> Next time you take a bite of chocolate think of the innocent blood that was shed to produce it. Coffee too. Other children are forced to toil in austere factories. May I hereby call upon all chocolate and coffee companies to certify their products as “Slave Free,” and hereby call upon all readers to boycott products not having this label? If those who contract the services of enslaved prostitutes are indirectly responsible for human trafficking, are not those who consume other products produced by slaves? As with drug trafficking,

---

<sup>36</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 94, quoting from Nina Smith, Rugmark Foundation.

<sup>37</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 139.

<sup>38</sup> Laogai Research Foundation, 2005-2006 Laogai Handbook, cited in Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, p. 172-174.

<sup>39</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 97, quoting from Free the Slaves.

<sup>40</sup> Raymond Bechar, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 97, quoting from Free the Slaves.

if the consumer stops feeding the beast of human trafficking, it will starve and wither.

*Weak from hunger, they staggered under large sacks of cocoa pods. If they slowed in their work, they were beaten. At night the slaveholder locked them all into a small room with only a tin can to use as a toilet. ...Drissa attempted to escape. The slaveholder quickly caught him and savagely beat him. ...The next day, Drissa was forced to work, even though the wounds from the beating were still raw.*<sup>41</sup>

*Workdays started at 4 A.M. and went on until 11 at night. The earthen floor of the factory was Khalak's bed. When the owner had a rush order, Khalak and the other boys would have to work through the entire night. The owner was so strict that he even complained when Khalak had to relieve himself.*<sup>42</sup>

- Domestic labor is another insidious evil occurring all around us. "The ILO estimates that 'domestic work in households of families other than the child's own is the largest single employment category of under-sixteen-year-old girls in the world.'<sup>43</sup> "In Fiji, eight out of ten domestic workers reported that their employers sexually abuse them.<sup>44</sup> Tens of thousands of girls as young as five bound in domestic servitude in Morocco work "100 or more hours per week, without rest breaks or days off, for as little as 70 cents per day."<sup>45</sup> Most however, are truly slaves who get no pay and are imprisoned in the homes of their wicked taskmasters.

*Every day I started work before 7 A.M. and finished about 11 P.M.; I never had a day off.*<sup>46</sup>

---

<sup>41</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 93, quoting from Free the Slaves.

<sup>42</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 102, quoting from Rugmark foundation.

<sup>43</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 99.

<sup>44</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 100, quoting from Anti-Slavery International.

<sup>45</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 101, quoting Clarisa Bencomo of Human Rights Watch.

<sup>46</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 100, quoting from Free the Slaves.

- Other abuses include use of child slaves for street begging, where they are sometimes intentionally crippled to engender sympathy, and camel racing, where children are strapped to camels and race, and where many fall off and are crushed. “In September 2006, a lawsuit was filed in U.S. district court charging Dubai ruler and United Arab Emirates Vice President, H E Sheikh Mohammed bin Rashid Al Maktoum and his brother, Sheikh Hamdan bin Rashid Al Maktoum, had enslaved some 30,000 children since 1975 for use as camel jockeys...boys as young as two years old have been stolen from their families, trafficked across international borders, and kept in brutal camel-racing camps throughout the United Arab Emirates...”<sup>47</sup>
- The 2009 Trafficking in Persons Report, Released by the U.S. Department of State, lists the following Tier 3 countries, “whose governments do not fully comply with the minimum standards [to eliminate trafficking] and are not making significant efforts to do so.”<sup>48</sup>
  - Burma
  - Chad
  - Cuba
  - Eritrea
  - Fiji
  - Iran
  - Kuwait
  - Malaysia
  - Mauritania
  - Niger
  - North Korea
  - Papua New Guinea
  - Saudi Arabia
  - Sudan
  - Swaziland
  - Syria
  - Zimbabwe
- The 2008 Trafficking in Persons Report also lists the following Tier 2 countries, whose governments do not fully comply with the minimum standards to eliminate trafficking but are making significant efforts to do so.<sup>49</sup>
  - Afghanistan, Albania, Antigua & Barbuda, Armenia, Barbados, Belarus, Benin, Bolivia, Bosnia & Herzegovina, Botswana,

---

<sup>47</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), p. 107.

<sup>48</sup> <http://www.state.gov/g/tip/rls/tiprpt/2009/123132.htm>

<sup>49</sup> <http://www.state.gov/g/tip/rls/tiprpt/2009/123132.htm>

Brazil, Brunei, Bulgaria, Burkina Faso, Chile, Costa Rica, Cyprus, Ecuador, El Salvador, Estonia, Ethiopia, Greece, Honduras, Hong Kong, Hungary, Iceland, Indonesia, Ireland, Israel, Jamaica, Japan, Jordan, Kazakhstan, Kenya, Kosovo, Kyrgyz Republic, Laos, Liberia, Macau, Madagascar, Malawi, Malta, Mexico, Mongolia, Morocco, Mozambique, Namibia, Nepal, Oman, Palau, Panama, Paraguay, Peru, Portugal, Romania, Rwanda, Serbia, Sierra Leone, Singapore, Slovak Republic, South Africa, Suriname, Taiwan, Tanzania, Thailand, The Bahamas, The Gambia, The Maldives, Timor-Leste, Togo, Trinidad & Tobago, Turkey, Uganda, Uruguay, Vietnam, and Zambia.

- The following are on the Report's Tier 2 Watch List, meaning they are trying to make significant efforts, but either trafficking is especially severe in their country, or there is a failure to show increased efforts from the previous year, or their efforts are based on future commitments over the next year.<sup>50</sup>
  - Algeria, Angola, Argentina, Azerbaijan, Bahrain, Bangladesh, Belize, Burundi, Cambodia, Cameroon, Central African Rep., China (PRC), Congo (DRC), Congo, Cote d'Ivoire, Djibouti, Dominican Republic, Egypt, Equatorial Guinea, Gabon, Ghana, Guatemala, Guinea, Guinea-Bissau, Guyana, India, Latvia, Lebanon, Lesotho, Libya, Mali, Micronesia, Moldova, Montenegro, Nicaragua, Pakistan, Philippines, Qatar, Rep. of Iraq, Russia, Senegal, Sri Lanka, St. Vincent & the Gren., Tajikistan, The Neth. Antilles, Tunisia, Turkmenistan, Ukraine, United Arab Emirates, Uzbekistan, Venezuela and Yemen,
- In a sickening betrayal of trust, UN peacekeepers assigned to protect refugees in Africa have been accused of offering hungry little girls food for sex. "According to the UN Secretary-General's report on Special Measures for Protection from Sexual Exploitation and Sexual Abuse (A/60/861) released in May 2006, seven UN agencies received 373 new sexual exploitation and abuse allegations during 2005, of which 340 involved UN peacekeeping personnel."<sup>51</sup>
- Diane Piiliv, 29, was a victim of human trafficking who had escaped her bondage. She had agreed to testify against eight people who were charged with her trafficking. But shortly before the trial, she was seen entering a car in Helsinki, Finland, where male voices could be heard.

<sup>50</sup> <http://www.state.gov/g/tip/rls/tiprpt/2009/123132.htm>

<sup>51</sup> U.S. Department of State, *Trafficking in Persons Report*, June 2007, p. 232.

- She was never heard from again. If you have any information about her disappearance, call the Helsinki police at 09-189-5464.<sup>52</sup>
- In Sudan, Muslims kidnap Christians, enslave them, abuse them and force them to convert to Islam. In March, 2007, Christian Solidarity International (CSI) participated in the freeing of 96 young men and boys.<sup>53</sup> Of these, 86% were forced to convert to Islam, 51% witnessed the execution of other slaves, 99% reported frequent beatings and six of the male slaves were raped by their masters. There are still tens of thousands of slaves in Sudan, many of them also women and girls who are being used for sex and forced labor. Here are accounts from two female slaves freed by CSI in January 2007.<sup>54</sup>

*16-year-old Agor Deng was repeatedly raped by her master, Adam Abakir and his associates. Adam Abakir and his wife excised her finger nails with a knife after she failed to obey an order to grind grain. They also forced her, using death threats, to pray like a Muslim.*

*45-year-old Achol Loc Wiel was shot in her leg during a slave raid. She also lost her husband and three children during the slave raid and forced march to Northern Sudan. Achol was gang raped by her master's friends. She was also forced to abandon the practice of her Christian faith and pray like a Muslim.*

\* \* \*

It takes a particularly vile and satanic creature to enter the hellish and sadistic realms of human trafficking, where even most hardened criminals would not tread. The human trafficker is a demonic beast of unrivaled cruelty and, in my opinion, is the most evil type of person in the world. May the Lord rebuke them.

*Rev 6:10, And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? (KJV)*

<sup>52</sup> Raymond Bechard, *Unspeakable* (New York: Compel Publishing, 2006), pp. 39, 49.

<sup>53</sup> Christian Solidarity International (CSI), Sudan Press Release Mar 07; [www.csi-int.org](http://www.csi-int.org).

<sup>54</sup> Christian Solidarity International (CSI), Sudan Press Release Jan 07; [www.csi-int.org](http://www.csi-int.org).

But I pray too that these traffickers repent of their evil, and say to them, learn of Jesus Christ, learn of His love, break the chains of your demonic possession, for you are enslaved to Satan, and take on the yoke of Jesus Christ, and become His bond servant, and you will be truly free.

Once there was a slave trader of old named John Newton, a captain of a ship which transported slaves, on which many died. John found Jesus Christ and repented of his evil. He was later used mightily by God. He wrote the words to a famous song, but not the melody. The composer of the melody is unknown. But some believe it was chanted in sorrow by a despairing slave, suffering in shackles, far from his family, on Newton's pitching ship atop the sea, heading to unknown cruelties in foreign lands, and that Newton had overheard the melody and put it to words.<sup>55</sup> The song: Amazing Grace.

If you receive Jesus Christ, you will become a new creation in Christ.

*2 Cor 5:17, Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (KJV)*

To you free I say pray for those in bondage, and become involved in efforts to liberate slaves. If you don't have time, contribute money to those who do; an earlier footnote cited organizations dedicated to freeing modern slaves. A few dollars donated by you could literally free a slave.

If you suspect trafficking in the U.S., call the Trafficking in Persons and Work Exploitation Task Force at the U.S DOJ at 888-428-7581. If abroad, contact U.S. authorities, since local officials may be corrupt. You can also call Ahava Kids, which rescues children, at 888-584-6068; this organization was founded by Raymond Bechard, author of the book *Unspeakable*, which was cited on numerous occasions in this chapter.

Pray for and help those in bonds.

*Heb 13:3, Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; and them which suffer adversity, as being yourselves also in the body. (KJV)*

---

<sup>55</sup> Wintley Phipps, *Amazing Grace History*, [http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DMF\\_24cQgT0](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=DMF_24cQgT0).

And don't be a consumer of products produced by slaves.

And former slaves, your healing too rests with Jesus Christ. Are you freed now? True freedom comes only with Jesus Christ. Receive Him. And sever the last cords of your former bondage by forgiving them that hurt you.

*The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me [Jesus] to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; (KJV)*

*Matt 11:28-30, [Jesus said] Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light. (KJV)*

*John 8:36, [Jesus said] If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. (KJV)*

## 2 Homosexuality

### Did you know?<sup>1</sup>

- About half of male homosexuals die before age 42, and about half of lesbians die before age 45.<sup>2</sup>
- The average homosexual has between 20 and 106 different partners per year.<sup>3</sup>
- 43% of homosexuals have had sex with 500 or more partners; 28% with 1000 or more; and 79% say half of their partners are total strangers.<sup>4</sup>
- The average number of partners for homosexual men is about 1,100.<sup>5</sup>
- 78% of homosexuals are affected by sexually transmitted diseases (STDs).<sup>6</sup>
- 39-59% of homosexuals are infected with intestinal parasites like worms, flukes and amoebae.<sup>7</sup>
- 50-75% of homosexuals are or were once infected with hepatitis B virus.<sup>8</sup>
- The U.S. Food and Drug Administration does not allow men who have had sex with men to donate blood because of the very high probability it carries disease (2000 times greater likelihood among likely donors).<sup>9</sup>
- 25-33% of homosexuals and lesbians are alcoholics.<sup>10</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Mostly from: Joseph M.D., Frank. "Everyone Should Know these Statistics on Homosexuals."  
<http://www.traditioninaction.org/HofTopics/a02rStatistics.html>.

<sup>2</sup> Fields, Dr. E. "Is Homosexual Activity Normal?" Marietta, GA.

<sup>3</sup> Corey, L. and Holmes, K. "Sexual Transmission of Hepatitis A in Homosexual Men." New England J. Med., 1980, pp. 435-38.

<sup>4</sup> Bell, A. and Weinberg, M. Homosexualities: a Study of Diversity Among Men and Women. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1978.

<sup>5</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 6.

<sup>6</sup> Rueda, E. The Homosexual Network. Old Greenwich, Conn., The Devin Adair Company, 1982, p. 53.

<sup>7</sup> Fields, Dr. E. "Is Homosexual Activity Normal?" Marietta, GA.

<sup>8</sup> Dr. Neil Reiner, 96 Annals of Internal Medicine, 1984:170. Cited in Alan Sears and Craig Osten's, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 43.

<sup>9</sup> Vaccines, Blood & Biologics, Blood Donations from Men Who Have Sex with Other Men, <http://www.fda.gov/BiologicsBloodVaccines/BloodBloodProducts/QuestionsaboutBlood/ucm108186.htm>.

<sup>10</sup> Kus, R. "Alcoholics Anonymous and Gay America." Medical Journal of Homosexuality, 1987, p. 254.

- 25-33% of homosexual couples living together have a serious problem with domestic violence.<sup>11</sup>
- Homosexuals are 100 times more likely to be murdered (mostly by each other), 25 times more likely to commit suicide, and 19 times more likely to die in a traffic accident<sup>12</sup> and 44 times more likely to contract AIDS.<sup>13</sup>
- 21% of lesbians die of murder, suicide or traffic accident.<sup>14</sup>
- About 50% of the women on death row are lesbians.<sup>15</sup>
- 33% of homosexuals admit to minor/adult sex.<sup>16</sup>
- 50% of suicides are homosexuals.<sup>17</sup>

Homosexuals make up only about 1-2% of the population, yet,<sup>18</sup>

- They commit more than 33% of reported child molestations in the U.S.<sup>19</sup>
- They account for 60% of syphilis cases in the U.S.<sup>20</sup>
- They account for 17% of non-sexually transmitted disease (STD) hospital admissions.<sup>21</sup>
- They account for 70-80% of hepatitis cases in San Francisco, 29% in Denver, 66% in New York City, 56% in Toronto, 42% in Montreal, and 26% in Melbourne.<sup>22</sup>
- They account for about 80% of the most serious STDs in the U.S.<sup>23</sup>
- White male homosexuals account for 77% of transmission of HIV/AIDS among whites; black male homosexuals account for 49% of transmission of HIV/AIDS among blacks.<sup>24</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Barnes, P. "It's Just a Quarrel." ABA Journal 84, February 1998. [Sheldon p. 93.]

<sup>12</sup> Fields, Dr. E. "Is Homosexual Activity Normal?" Marietta, GA.

<sup>13</sup> CDC Fact Sheet, HIV and AIDS among Gay and Bisexual Men;

<http://www.cdc.gov/NCHHSTP/newsroom/docs/FastFacts-msm-Final508COMP.pdf>

<sup>14</sup> Fields, Dr. E. "Is Homosexual Activity Normal?" Marietta, GA.

<sup>15</sup> Lesbian News, January 1994.

<sup>16</sup> Family Research Institute, Lincoln, NE.

<sup>17</sup> Kaifetz, J. "Homosexual Rights Are Concern for Some," Post-Tribune, 18 December 1992.

<sup>18</sup> Mostly from: Joseph M.D., Frank. "Everyone Should Know these Statistics on Homosexuals."

<http://www.traditioninaction.org/HofTopics/a02rStatistics.html> .

<sup>19</sup> Psychological Reports, 1986, 58, pp. 327-37.

<sup>20</sup> "Changes in Sexual Behavior and Incidence of Gonorrhea." Lancet, April 25, 1987.

<sup>21</sup> "Changes in Sexual Behavior and Incidence of Gonorrhea." Lancet, April 25, 1987.

<sup>22</sup> Fields, Dr. E. "Is Homosexual Activity Normal?" Marietta, GA.

<sup>23</sup> Bell, A. and Weinberg, M. Homosexualities: a Study of Diversity Among Men and Women.

New York: Simon & Schuster, 1978. [Sheldon, p. 63.]

- They account for well over 50% of U.S. AIDS cases, which cost about \$300,000 each for treatment, not to mention the vast numbers of non-AIDS maladies, which raise insurance rates, or taxes in the case of socialized medicine, for the rest of us 98%.<sup>25</sup> That is an enormous sum, considering that the care of AIDS and HIV patients alone consumes about 1% of the Gross Domestic Product (GDP) in the U.S (about \$100 billion per year).<sup>26</sup>
  - This statistic reveals one of the motivations behind the homosexual agenda for same-sex marriage and socialized medicine—to get the rest of society to pay for the grossly disproportionate health care demands of their sinful lifestyle.
  - However, just as some insurance companies charge higher rates for smokers, they should charge even higher rates for homosexuals, as homosexuality is vastly more debilitating and deadly than smoking.

Many homosexuals commit vile acts with their partners, including “fisting” (inserting their clenched fist into their partner’s rectum) and eating their partner’s feces. Many have died from abuse during rough sex. Almost all homosexuals practice anal intercourse, which is the cause of most of the disease transmission, as the rectum is very permeable to contagions.

Homosexuality is clearly a very unhealthy and unhappy lifestyle which leads to early death. God, in His love for us, wisely forbade mankind from practicing this deadly sin, just as any loving father would forbid his children from playing with poison or fire—or in the sewage.

### **What does the Bible say about homosexuality?**

It is an abomination.

- *Lev 18:22, You shall not lie with a male as with a woman. It is an abomination. (NKJ)*
- *Lev 20:13, If a man lies with a male as he lies with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination. They shall surely be put to death. Their blood shall be upon them. (NKJ)*

It is vile, unnatural, shameful, erroneous and will be penalized.

---

<sup>24</sup> Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, Morbidity and Mortality Weekly Report, December 3, 2004. [Sheldon, The Agenda, p. 67.]

<sup>25</sup> Kaifetz, J. "Homosexual Rights Are Concern for Some," Post-Tribune, 18 December 1992.

<sup>26</sup> Oldham, Jennifer. "The Economic Cost of AIDS." Los Angeles Times, October 13, 1995. [Sheldon, p. 63-64.]

- *Rom 1:26-27, For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature. Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due. (NKJ)*

It is unrighteous. Homosexuals will not inherit the Kingdom of God.

- *Rev 21:8, "But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death." (NKJ)*
- *1 Cor 6:9-10, Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God. (NKJ)*

But if they come to Jesus Christ they will be saved, as is seen in the verse following the one above.

- *1 Cor 6:11, And such were some of you. But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and by the Spirit of our God. (NKJ)*

You have heard it said, God loves the sinner but hates the sin. Jesus said, "For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost." Luke 19:10, KJV.

Are you a homosexual? Turn from your sin and come to Jesus Christ now. He loves you.

How? Believe that Jesus Christ came to the earth as God in human form, that he died on the cross to pay the price for your sins; that He rose again three days later and is alive today; and that all who believe on Him and receive Him as Lord of their lives will be saved.

Pray: *Dear Lord Jesus, I know that I am a sinner and need Your forgiveness. I believe that You died for my sins. I want to turn from my sins. I now invite You to come into my heart and life as my Lord and Savior. In Jesus' name. Amen.*

Are you a heterosexual, but a fornicator or adulterer? Are you any better? Repent.

The Bible teaches that sex is to be enjoyed only between a husband and wife. Sex outside of the bonds of marriage between a man and a woman is forbidden.

- *Heb 13:4, Marriage is honorable among all, and the bed undefiled; but fornicators and adulterers God will judge. (NKJ)*

Neither should sex outside of the bonds of marriage even be thought about or imagined.

- *Matt 5:28, "But I [Jesus] say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. (NKJ)*

Homosexuality is a sin for which God has historically judged nations. Homosexuals become violent and forceful in pursuit of their filthy passions. The following is a description of a homosexual mob in Sodom who wanted to rape and "sodomize" two male guests, who were actually angels, of Abraham's nephew Lot.

- *Gen 19:4-11, Before they had gone to bed, all the men from every part of the city of Sodom—both young and old—surrounded the house. They called to Lot, "Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us so that we can have sex with them." Lot went outside to meet them and shut the door behind him and said, "No, my friends. Don't do this wicked thing. Look, I have two daughters who have never slept with a man. Let me bring them out to you, and you can do what you like with them. But don't do anything to these men, for they have come under the protection of my roof." "Get out of our way," they replied. And they said, "This fellow came here as an alien, and now he wants to play the judge! We'll treat you worse than them." They kept bringing pressure on Lot and moved forward to break down the door. But the men inside reached out and pulled Lot back into the house and shut the door. Then they struck the men who were at the door of the house, young and old, with blindness so that they could not find the door. (NIV)*

God later rained down fire and brimstone upon Sodom and Gomorrah and destroyed the city and its inhabitants. Jude tells us the reason for this judgment was their sexual immorality, and their fate is an eternity in hell:

- *Jude 1:7, ...Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. (KJV)*

If God so treated Sodom and Gomorrah, how will he treat the U.S. as it continues to slide down the same road of calling good what God calls evil? History shows that nations which have embraced sexual perversion soon decline and then die.

- *Isa 5:20, Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! (KJV)*

### **They're Eying Your Children**

Today, the homosexuals rage just as they did in Sodom, and they are targeting your children:

- *We shall sodomize your sons, emblems of your feeble masculinity, of your shallow dreams and vulgar lies. We shall seduce them ...Your sons shall become our minions and do our bidding. They will be recast in our image.<sup>27</sup>*
- *We promise to recruit.<sup>28</sup>*
- *Sex before 8 before it's too late.<sup>29</sup>*

Homosexuals are seeking to abolish age-of-consent laws and decriminalize sex with minors. They are after your children. They are eyeing your children with evil intent. They seek to pull your children from the shining path of life with Christ to the dark alleys of rebellion, disease and death.

The following website will show you the sexual offenders living near your home. You may be shocked, as I was, at the large number of offenders living in your neighborhood.

- <http://www12.familywatchdog.us>

---

<sup>27</sup> Swift, Michael. Gay Community News. February, 1987 (extracted from Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 2).

<sup>28</sup> DC Lesbian Avengers.

<sup>29</sup> North American Man and Boy Love Association (NAMBLA).

In 2007, California Governor Arnold Schwarzenegger signed into law bills that:<sup>30</sup>

- Allow boys to use girls' restrooms and locker rooms if they identify with the female gender and females the same if they identify as males.
- Ban all negative discussion on homosexuality (SB777).
- Provide for homosexual "anti-harassment" training (AB394).
- Promote homosexuality through tax-funded "publications, postings, curricula and handouts to students, parents and teachers" (AB394).
- Prohibit state funding for programs that do not support alternative sexual practices, including churches, day care centers, "preschool or after-school programs, food and housing programs, senior services, anti-gang efforts, jobs programs and others."
- Ban the use of "Mom and Dad" and "husband and wife" in California schools because they would be "discriminatory" of homosexual couples.
- You say you don't want your naked teenage daughters sharing the locker room with naked teenage boys? That's too bad, says Schwarzenegger, who came to our country, became a millionaire, was elected governor as a conservative, and then thanks America by working to destroy the Christian heritage of the country our forefathers fought and died to create and defend.

In 2009, Arnold Schwarzenegger signed into law bills that:

- Declare every May 22 Harvey Milk Day in California (SB 572). This will force schoolchildren to celebrate the life of the late Harvey Milk, a homosexual politician who aggressively pushed the homosexual agenda, every May 22.
- Require California to grant marriage rights to same-sex couples married outside of California prior to the 2008 passage of Proposition 8, which defined marriage in California as the legal union of one man and one woman.

Activist homosexuals are now ramming their agenda on the rest of society, and our government is accepting it. Why would our government officials possibly want to promote such an unhealthy and dangerous lifestyle? Either they are ignorant of the dangers, or they are accepting bribes to do so, or they are succumbing to bullying to do so, or they are intentionally

---

<sup>30</sup> WorldNetDaily.com, Brave New Schools, 'Mom' and 'Dad' banished by California, October 13, 2007. [http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=58130](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=58130)

trying to destroy the country, or they are themselves homosexuals in favor of such practices.

There are no rational arguments in favor of promoting such a destructive and deadly lifestyle. That is why activist homosexuals have to resort not to reason, but to intimidation, brute force and *ad hominem* attacks (attacks upon the person rather than the argument) upon those who expose the dangers of their agenda, reminiscent of the tactics of the fascist brown shirts of Nazi Germany.

### **What does the Bible say about cross dressing?**

It should not be done. Those that do it are an abomination to God.

*Deut 22:5, The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy God. (KJV)*

### **Hate Crimes**

Homosexuals also demand the opposition to be muzzled with hate crime legislation. This has already happened in Canada and Europe, and it is beginning to happen in America.

- A newspaper in Canada which placed an ad quoting biblical passages on homosexuality and the person placing the ad were both fined for a human rights offense.<sup>31</sup>
- A Canadian teacher was suspended for writing a letter to a newspaper stating that no one is born a homosexual.<sup>32</sup>
- A pastor in Sweden was prosecuted for referencing biblical passages on homosexuality during a sermon.<sup>33</sup>
- In Philadelphia, eleven Christians were arrested and charged with "ethnic intimidation," a hate crime originally covering ethnicity but later revised to include sexual orientation, after they shared the gospel at a gay event. They faced decades in prison. This, of

---

<sup>31</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 15.

<sup>32</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 15.

<sup>33</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 16.

course, was a violation of their First Amendment right to free speech.<sup>34</sup>

Hate crimes also impose greater punishment for the same crime depending on what the person was supposedly thinking during the crime. This effectively creates a new super-class of citizen and renders the rest of us second-class citizens. For example, if you are not a homosexual, and you are murdered or attacked, your murderer or attacker will receive less punishment than if you were a homosexual “super-citizen.” This also violates the 14<sup>th</sup> amendment, in which “the equal protection of the laws” is guaranteed to all citizens, for this now creates unequal protection.

The "Matthew Shepard Hate Crimes Prevention Act," would not only make homosexuals super-citizens, but super-citizens would also be created among those having sex with children, animals, their own children, and even dead bodies, and the rest of us second-class citizens would be silenced from speaking ill of these sinful behaviors.

### **Indoctrinating Children**

In Massachusetts, where gay marriage is legal, David Parker was upset that his five-year old son was being taught about homosexual families in kindergarten.<sup>35</sup> When he complained to the school, and refused to leave before he was given the option of being notified and excluding his son from these teachings, the school had him arrested and thrown in jail.

Why are our schools among the worst in preparing our children academically for our high-tech world despite spending the most? Because our schools have become social indoctrination centers, where teachings of “reading, writing and arithmetic” and science are eclipsed by teachings of homosexuality, godless evolution and a historical revisionism which denies the Christian heritage of America. Schools should stop the brainwashing and stick to the basics. But those wishing to change and fundamentally transform America from a God-fearing republic to a godless Marxist/communist state realize that the key to the future is in the classroom where young minds can be taught lies.

- *Give me four years to teach the children, and the seed I have sown will never be uprooted. –Lenin*

---

<sup>34</sup> Speechless: Silencing the Christians, Episode 3.

<http://www.silencingchristians.com/Default.aspx>

<sup>35</sup> WorldNetDaily. Brave New Schools. August 04, 2005.

[http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=58130](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=58130)

- *He alone, who owns the youth, gains the future. –Adolf Hitler*

I remember once hearing a story on the radio of a mother whose five-year-old daughter came home from school and announced, “Mommy, I’m a lesbian!” The mother was shocked and asked where she got such an idea. The daughter explained that her teacher taught that if one girl liked another girl she was a lesbian, and, since she liked her little five-year-old girlfriend she must be a lesbian. To plant such ideas into such fresh, impressionable young minds, who by the way have a natural aversion to the opposite sex at prepubescent ages, is an unspeakable outrage. To those teachers leading these innocents astray, I say hear the words of Jesus Christ:

- *Matt 18:6, "But whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in Me to sin, it would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were drowned in the depth of the sea." (NKJ)*

### **Moral Erosion**

Homosexuality prior to 1973 was classified as a mental disorder by the American Psychiatric Association (APA). In 1973, after a relentless campaign of intimidation and bullying, the APA cowed and removed homosexuality from its list of mental disorders. Despite this, most psychiatrists polled later in 1977 still thought homosexuality was, “a pathological adaptation as opposed to a normal variation.”<sup>36</sup> More recently, the American Psychological Association admitted that, “Although much research has examined the possible genetic, hormonal, developmental, social, and cultural influences on sexual orientation, no findings have emerged that permit scientists to conclude that sexual orientation is determined by any particular factor or factors.”<sup>37</sup> There is no evidence whatsoever that homosexuals are “born that way.”

Homosexuals appear regularly now in TV and movies, something which would be unheard of in the past. They are usually presented as noble, enlightened, healthy, happy and generous characters, not as the diseased, dying, worm-infested, dark, unhappy, tragic and perverse sexual predators they are. Incidentally, these same shows often have Christian characters presented as stumbling, selfish, foolish, stupid and intolerant

<sup>36</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. “The Agenda.” Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 23.

<sup>37</sup> American Psychological Association, Answers to Your Questions For a Better Understanding of Sexual Orientation & Homosexuality; <http://www.apa.org/topics/orientation.html>

buffoons, and not the bright, loving, caring and giving characters they typically are. Thus is good condemned and evil celebrated.

Madonna, a vocal proponent of homosexuality, after kissing Britney Spears and Christine Aguilera during a mock lesbian wedding on an MTV television show, stated, "They digest it on a lot of different levels. Some people will see it and be disgusted by it, but maybe they'll be unconsciously aroused by it. If people keep seeing it and seeing it and seeing it, eventually it's not going to be such a strange thing."<sup>38</sup> During this same show, the three singers sang, "How could it hurt you when it looks so good," and "We're bored with the concept of right and wrong."<sup>39</sup>

This serves to desensitize the public, and especially the youth, to the menace and shame of homosexuality.

## **Tactics**

Homosexual activist tactics include:

- Desensitize the public by repeated exposure to images of a homosexual lifestyle which is glittering, fun and glamorous;
- Conceal the true statistics which undeniably show the extreme dangers of the homosexual lifestyle;
- Present gays as poor victims in need of defense from hateful people;
- Vilify opponents;
- Associate opponents to truly odious groups like the KKK and Nazis;
- Public protests;
- Clever use of attractive wording such as fairness, tolerance, diversity, inclusion and nondiscrimination. It is also revealing that the term "sexual preference" was changed to "sexual orientation," because the former implied choice. Homosexuality is also called an alternative lifestyle. This disguises the fact that it is actually a deathstyle, for it is an absolute fact that it leads to disease and early death.

---

<sup>38</sup> The Advocate, May 7, 1991, p. 49 (reported on <http://goodfight.org> ).

<sup>39</sup> [http://www.madonnalyrics.org/remixed\\_and\\_revisited.html](http://www.madonnalyrics.org/remixed_and_revisited.html).

The ACLU has also been passionately involved in defending and promoting homosexual causes, as has the New York Times and Boston Globe.

As a result of these unrelenting campaigns, homosexual lobbyists have been successful in removing state sodomy laws, appointing homosexual clergy, electing homosexuals to political office, granting minority civil rights to homosexuals, passing state and city antidiscrimination laws, allowing gays into the military, imposing greater punishment for crimes against homosexuals than the same crimes against heterosexuals (hate crimes), teaching homosexuality in schools and legalizing same-sex marriage.

## **ENDA**

Homosexual lobbyists have been trying for years to pass ENDA, the Employment Non-Discrimination Act. If made law, ENDA would:<sup>40</sup>

- Require private businesses with 15 or more employees to hire homosexuals, drag queens, transsexuals, she-males (males below the waste; females above), and even those with other perverse sexual orientations, such as those practicing bestiality, incest, necrophilia, and pedophilia.
- Force businesses to allow males who think they are females, when they are in fact males, to use female bathrooms and showers. Same with females who think they are males.
  - In so doing, the government is legalizing and legitimizing a treatable mental illness called, “Gender Identity Disorder.”
- Require religious organizations whose primary purpose is not “religious ritual or worship or the teaching or spreading of religious doctrine or belief” to hire homosexuals and other sexual deviants.
  - This would include Christian daycare centers, schools, hospitals, etc. Basically, anything but a church.
    - Of course, once this gets through, they circle back and add churches later.
  - Thus a Christian (or even a secular) daycare center could be forced to hire a homosexual pedophile, 33% of whom admit to having had sex with minors.

But in fact there is no basis for this act because homosexuals are not discriminated against in the work place, as demonstrated by the following:

---

<sup>40</sup> “TVC Gears Up For ENDA Battle In September,” Traditional Values Coalition, August 30, 2007, <http://www.traditionalvalues.org/modules.php?sid=3128>

- A homosexual's average income is already 41% above average;<sup>41</sup>
- Already 49% of homosexuals hold professional or managerial jobs compared to just 16% of the general population.<sup>42</sup>

It sounds more like the rest of us are being discriminated against, yet the homosexuals want to further relegate the rest of us to a second-class citizenship status and elevate themselves to super-citizen status.

*A note to homosexuals: These statistics show that God has blessed you with talent. God loves you! Use your talent to glorify God, not to fight against Him. In the Lord Jesus Christ there is Joy and Life! Without Him there is misery and death. Choose Life! Follow Christ.*

Federal law aside, homosexual groups have been successful in getting concessions to their demands for nondiscrimination and same-sex benefits in the corporate world. It is estimated that over half of Fortune 500 companies, all federal government employees, 14 states, 165 cities and counties, almost 70% of the largest law firms and 64 U.S. Senators now have sexual-orientation non-discrimination policies.<sup>43</sup>

Some corporations don't just passively concede, but get actively involved in promoting these practices.

PepsiCo, maker of such products as Pepsi soft drinks, Frito-Lay chips, Quaker Oats, Tropicana and Gatorade, donated \$500,000 each to the Human Rights Campaign (HRC) and Parents and Friends of Lesbians and Gays (PFLAG) to support the gay agenda in the workplace.<sup>44</sup> Said PepsiCo contribution director Jacqueline Millan, "We are delighted to continue our partnership with PFLAG." PFLAG is a radical group which also supports gay marriage, hate-crime laws, and gay adoption. HRC gave \$2.3 million to defeat California's Proposition 8, which defined marriage as between a man and a woman. PepsiCo also:

- Helped sponsor an episode of *Family Guy* on Fox which promoted homosexuality and mocked Christ.<sup>45</sup>

<sup>41</sup> Society for Human Resource Management, survey 1996. [Sheldon, p. 110.]

<sup>42</sup> Statistical Abstract of the U.S., 1990.

<sup>43</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, pp. 115, 120-121.

<sup>44</sup> American Family Association, Action Alert, November 14, 2008.

<sup>45</sup> American Family Association Action Alert, April 24, 2009.

- Helped sponsor a “very explicit, aggressive scene featuring two men” in the April 19, 2009 episode of *Brothers and Sisters* on ABC.<sup>46</sup>
- Agreed to sponsor the June 27, 2009 New York Gay Pride Parade.<sup>47</sup>
- Is a member of the National Gay and Lesbian Chamber of Commerce.<sup>48</sup>
- Forces employees to attend sexual orientation and gender diversity training where they are taught to accept homosexuality.<sup>49</sup>

A boycott against Pepsi begun in 2008 by the American Family Association (<http://www.afa.net/>), and pledged by more than 500,000 people, was finally lifted in 2010, when AFA became “satisfied the company has withdrawn its major financial contributions to gay activist groups.”<sup>50</sup>

In 2005, eHarmony, an on-line dating service, was sued in New Jersey by a homosexual who claimed discrimination because the company didn't sell homosexual matchmaking services, despite the fact that there are a multitude of gay dating service alternatives. This is like someone suing MacDonald's because they don't sell spaghetti! In 2007, New Jersey's office of attorney general stated they thought that eHarmony *had* violated their state's anti-discrimination law. In 2008, eHarmony decided to surrender without further fighting. They agreed to pay a cash settlement and to start a same-sex dating service. Why didn't they fight further? God would have been with them. Now they are supporting evil, and have gone the way of Balaam, who sinned for money. They have made a contract with the enemy, but the enemy will not help them because he is a liar. What can we do? Christians should start suing gay dating services for not providing heterosexual services.

*Prov 25:26, A righteous man who falters before the wicked is like a murky spring and a polluted well. (NKJ)*

## 10% Gay?

Homosexuals claim that 10% of the population is gay. This myth was started by Alfred Kinsey. It is now known to be a lie. Credible studies,

<sup>46</sup> American Family Association Action Alert, March 30, 2009.

<sup>47</sup> American Family Association Action Alert, May 7, 2009.

<sup>48</sup> American Family Association Action Alert, February 23, 2009.

<sup>49</sup> American Family Association Action Alert, February 23, 2009.

<sup>50</sup> <http://www.afa.net/Detail.aspx?id=2147491835>

such as those of Dr. Judith Reisman and Edward Eichel which researched eight separate studies, have all concluded that the incidence of homosexuality is only about 1-2%.<sup>51</sup> A very small percentage of the population is jamming its immoral agenda down the rest of our throats. Why are you sitting idly by? *Become more active in stopping evil and promoting righteousness!*

## Born Gay?

Homosexuality is not a genetic trait. There has never been any evidence that a gay gene exists. Even homosexual researchers who promote the gay agenda cede this fact:

- Dean Hamer said, “There is not a single master gene that makes people gay...I don’t think we will ever be able to predict who will be gay.”<sup>52</sup>
- Dr. Simon LeVay stated, “It’s important to stress what I didn’t find. I did not prove that homosexuality is genetic, or find a genetic cause for being gay. I didn’t show that gay men are born that way, the most common mistake people make in interpreting my work.”<sup>53</sup>
- Dr. Camille Paglia states, “No one is born gay...Homosexuality is an adaptation, not an inborn trait.”<sup>54</sup>

If it’s not genetic, then it must be environmental. And studies support this. As an example, a Family Research Council (FRC) study found that a girl who is raised in a home without her father is about three times more likely to experiment in homosexuality.<sup>55</sup> The rate is also slightly higher with cohabitating parents, step-families, and single divorced parents.

Homosexuality is a learned behavior, and it can be unlearned, just as a thief can learn not to steal or an alcoholic not to drink. 52% of homosexuals who went into therapy overcame their same-sex desires.<sup>56</sup> Other success rates were as high as 65-70%.<sup>57</sup>

<sup>51</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. “The Agenda.” Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 39-40.

<sup>52</sup> A. Dean Byrd, Shirley Cox, Jeffrey Robinson. “Homosexuality: The Innate-Immutability Argument Finds No Basis In Science.” Salt Lake Tribune. May 27, 2001. [Sheldon, p. 226]

<sup>53</sup> A. Dean Byrd, Shirley Cox, Jeffrey Robinson. “Homosexuality: The Innate-Immutability Argument Finds No Basis In Science.” Salt Lake Tribune. May 27, 2001. [Sheldon, p. 226]

<sup>54</sup> Camille Paglia. Vamps and Tramps (New York: Vintage Books, 1994). [Sheldon, p. 226]

<sup>55</sup> Charlie Butts, “Lesbianism linked to upbringing,” OneNewsNow, 11/22/2010, <http://www.onenewsnow.com/Culture/Default.aspx?id=1236282> ,

<sup>56</sup> Satinover, Jeffrey. “Homosexuality and the Politics of Truth.” Grand Rapids, MI: Baker, 1996, p. 186. [Sheldon, p. 161.]

<sup>57</sup> Schwartz and Masters, “The Masters and Johnson Treatment Program for Dissatisfied Homosexual Men,” American Journal of Psychiatry 141, 1984, 173-181. [Sheldon, p. 161]

Man is genetically male, and woman is genetically female. Gen 1:27 states, *So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.* (KJV)

God created humankind either male or female, not some mixture of the two. Because homosexuality is a learned behavior, if society affirms it as acceptable, it will be learned by more than the current 1-2%. That is exactly what activist homosexuals want: an expansion of the pool of homosexual partner choices. Greater hunting grounds. More prey. And the younger it is taught as being acceptable, the more it will influence impressionable young minds and the more will learn it. This is indeed spiritual warfare.

### **Homosexuals Deserving of Special Protection as a Minority Class?**

Three standards must be met to achieve specially-protected class status as a minority: 1) Financial/economic discrimination; 2) Immutable characteristics, like race, color, or gender; 3) Political powerlessness. Homosexuals are well above average in success, so they fail in the first test. Homosexual behavior is not immutable (unchangeable), so they fail in the second test. Homosexuals are among the most politically powerful and well-financed, so they fail in the third test also. Conclusion: Homosexuals do not qualify to be a specially-protected minority class.

### **Homosexual Clergy**

Churches which approve homosexual behavior are endorsing behavior which the Bible states will keep people out of heaven.

*1 Cor 6:9-10, Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God.* (NKJ)

- In 2003, openly gay and non-celibate priest Gene Robinson was consecrated as a bishop in the Episcopal Church USA in New Hampshire. Having a church leader flagrantly engaged in activity the Bible calls sin was too much for many to bear. Since then many dioceses have seceded from the parent church and attendance has declined.

- The United Methodist Church and the Presbyterian Church USA are experiencing similar issues.
- The Rev. Katherine Hancock Ragsdale was appointed president and dean of Episcopal Divinity School on July 1, 2009. She is a pro-abortion lesbian who questions the resurrection of Jesus.<sup>58</sup> She calls abortion “a blessing” and “holy work.”
- On August 19, 2009, at 2 PM, the exact time the Evangelical Lutheran Church of America (ELCA) was to begin consideration of a statement that would basically endorse same-sex relationships, a tornado struck the Minneapolis Convention Center where they were meeting, and the Central Lutheran church across the street, damaging the Convention Center’s roof, shredding the church tents erected to accommodate the expected large crowds, and breaking the cross off the church steeple.<sup>59</sup> The voters failed to get the message. They approved the statement nonetheless.

Satan and his demons must have been pleased with all of this.

### Christian Defenders

Many groups are doing a valiant job standing up against this onslaught of immorality. Here are a some of them:

- Traditional Values Coalition, <http://www.traditionalvalues.org/>
- American Family Association, <http://www.afa.net/>
- Focus on the Family, <http://www.focusonthefamily.com/>
- Family Research Council, <http://www.frc.org/>
- Family Research Institute, <http://www.familyresearchinst.org/>

There are many more.

The following are legal groups committed to protecting our religious freedoms:

- The Alliance Defense Fund, <http://www.alliancedefensefund.org/main/default.aspx>
- American Center for Law and Justice, <http://www.aclj.org/>

<sup>58</sup> Marvin Olansky, “The Blessing of Abortion,” World Magazine, May 9, 2009.

<sup>59</sup> John Piper, “The Tornado, the Lutherans, and Homosexuality,” August 20, 2009, [http://www.desiringgod.org/Blog/1965\\_the\\_tornado\\_the\\_lutherans\\_and\\_homosexuality/](http://www.desiringgod.org/Blog/1965_the_tornado_the_lutherans_and_homosexuality/)

- Pacific Justice Institute, <http://www.pacificjustice.org/>
- Liberty Council, <http://www.lc.org/>
- The Rutherford Institute, <https://www.rutherford.org/>

Will you please get involved? If you don't have time, at least donate to help these organizations.

Rev. Louis Sheldon, chairman of the Traditional Values Coalition, is the author of the "The Agenda" which is referenced numerous times herein; it is an excellent book, and some of his experiences from his decades of defending our traditional values and defending himself against mobs of rabid homosexuals are amazing reading. In one case,<sup>60</sup> a group of 100 angry homosexuals gathered around a church in San Francisco where Sheldon was due to speak. They began destroying church property, screaming profanities, accosting church-goers and taking their Bibles, barricading the doors with their bodies, raging insanely and pounding violently on the church doors. When a complaint was made to the police, the police said they couldn't respond by orders of the San Francisco government, and that earlier a police officer had been suspended for stopping homosexuals from committing sex acts in public, despite the fact that performing sex acts in public was illegal. The police were afraid to protect property and people for fear of getting fired by the gay-friendly Board of Supervisors. Finally, when the pounding and screaming escalated to a frenzy, Sheldon called 911 and finally convinced them to send riot police or blood would be soon running in the streets, which they finally did. Still, the police only removed them to the sidewalks, and not to a distance of at least 500 feet from the church as stipulated by California law, where they continued yelling obscenities. Thus is the breakdown in law and order when homosexual activists become entrenched in the corridors of government. And thus is the demonic rage against Christianity that is characteristic of many who engage in this sinful lifestyle.

### **A Gay Parade of 100 Homosexuals**

Imagine a gay parade consisting of 100 average homosexuals. Odds are conservatively that:<sup>61</sup>

- 80 carry infectious pathogens
- 80 have a history of sexually transmitted diseases

---

<sup>60</sup> Sheldon, Louis P. "The Agenda." Florida: FrontLine, 2005, p. 101-103.

<sup>61</sup> Adapted from: Thomas Schmidt, "Straight and Narrow? Compassion and Clarity in the Homosexuality Debate," Intervarsity Press, p. 127. Cited in "The Gay Agenda: A Christian Response," David Morrison, Human Life International, p. 8.

- At least 30 will have HIV and 10 have AIDS
- 30 have digestive or urinary ailments
- 30 are alcoholics
- 50 have a history of alcohol abuse
- 50 regularly use at least one illegal drug and 30 are multiple drug users
- 40 have a history of depression
- 20 have attempted suicide
- 60 regularly have sex with strangers
- 10 prefer boys to men
- 10 are sadomasochists
- The group averages 200 partners/month (2 per person per month)

Think of this next time you see a gay parade. You're looking at a sad procession of human tragedy and human wreckage.

*Gal 6:7, Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (KJV)*

The Bible warns those to listen to these warnings lest they contract sexually transmitted diseases:

*Prov 5:7-13, Hear me now...Remove thy way far from her...Lest ... thou mourn at the last, when thy flesh and thy body are consumed, And say, How have I hated instruction, and my heart despised reproof; And have not obeyed the voice of my teachers... (KJV)*

Yet God would not have it that way.

*Luke 19:10, [Jesus said] For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost. (KJV)*

*Matt 4:17, ...Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. (KJV)*

*Rom 10:13, For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. (KJV)*

## **Population control and eugenics**

There are elites in power who truly want to significantly reduce the earth's population, so as not to cause damage to their goddess "Mother Earth," and they are indifferent to the vast sea of human suffering caused along the way. The practice of population control, and putting the environment and nature ahead of human need, goes against the commands of God, who said,

*Gen 1:28, And God blessed them [Adam and Eve], and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. (KJV)*

Homosexuals do not reproduce; they get sick and die young, so the practice is endorsed by adherents of population control. As is war, disease (manmade and otherwise), famine, abortion, forced sterilization, infanticide, limits on live births, such as China's one-child policy, euthanasia, immunosuppressant agents (such as mycoplasma), toxin- and disease-carrying vaccinations, disease-causing artificial sweeteners (aspartame) and flavor enhancers (MSG), fluoridated water, aluminum usage in food products and vaccines, and anything else that kills off population.

There is a Stonehenge-like monument in Georgia, commissioned anonymously, which presents precepts of population control in eight languages. Among them:

*1. Maintain humanity under 500,000,000 in perpetual balance with nature;*

*2. Guide reproduction wisely — improving fitness [read elimination of the unfit through selective breeding and euthanizing the unfit] and diversity [read acceptance of homosexuality];*

*10. Be not a cancer on the earth — Leave room for nature — Leave room for nature.*

Margaret Sanger, founder of the abortion organization Planned Parenthood, called for the following:

*"The 'elimination of 'human weeds,' ...*

*"the 'cessation of charity' because it prolonged the lives of the unfit, ...*

*"the segregation of 'morons, misfits, and the maladjusted,' ...*

*and for the sterilization of genetically inferior races."<sup>62</sup>*

Margaret Sanger, founder of Planned Parenthood, wanted to eliminate inferior races, including blacks. She said:

*"The masses of Negroes ...particularly in the South, still breed carelessly and disastrously, with the result that the increase among Negroes, even more than among whites, is from that portion of the population least intelligent and fit..."<sup>63</sup>*

*"The most successful educational approach to the Negro is through a religious appeal. **We do not want word to go out that we want to exterminate the Negro population,** and the Minister is the man who can straighten out that idea if it ever occurs to any of their more rebellious members."<sup>64</sup>*

Planned Parenthood's founder, Margaret Sanger, also wanted to eliminate "Fundamentalists and Catholics," in addition to "blacks,

---

<sup>62</sup> Killer Angel: George Grant: Reformer Press: p 65, 71-72, 92: see also Pivot of Civilization: Sanger: New York: Bretano's: pp 101,108,123. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm> .

<sup>63</sup> Woman's Body, Woman's Right: Linda Gordon: New York: Penguin Press: p 332: see also Killer Angel: p 73. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm> .

<sup>64</sup> Woman's Body, Woman's Right: Linda Gordon: New York: Penguin Press: p 229-334: see also Killer Angel: p 74. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm> .

Hispanics, (and) American Indians."<sup>65</sup> She was also a communist who, as an occultist theosophist, worshipped Lucifer, who is Satan. She said:

*"Birth control appeals to the advanced radical because it is calculated to undermine the authority of the Christian churches. I look forward to seeing humanity free someday of the tyranny of Christianity no less than Capitalism."*<sup>66</sup>

Margaret Sanger supported Hitler's infanticide program, his goal of Aryan white supremacy, and she even hired the director of his German Medical Experimentation Program, Ernst Rudin, as an advisor.<sup>67</sup>

What do the leaders of Planned Parenthood think of their horrific past?

***"Proud of our past, and planning for our future."***  
*—Planned Parenthood's 1985 Annual Report.*

Adolph Hitler, was also a theosophist/occultist who worshipped Satan, just like Planned Parenthood founder Margaret Sanger. Hitler's genocidal extermination of six million Jews is common knowledge. What is less well known is that Hitler also exterminated another 7-12 million persons whom he deemed unfit for life, most of whom were Christians.<sup>68</sup>

Other quotes:

*"I admire Margaret Sanger enormously, her courage, her tenacity, her vision . . . And when I think about what she did*

---

<sup>65</sup> Woman's Body, Woman's Right: Linda Gordon: New York: Penguin Press: p 229-334: see also Killer Angel: p 73. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm> .

<sup>66</sup> Killer Angel: p 104. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm> .

<sup>67</sup> "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

<sup>68</sup> "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

*all those years ago in Brooklyn, taking on archetypes, taking on attitudes and accusations flowing from all directions, I am really in awe of her.” – Secretary of State Hillary Clinton, accepting the Margaret Sanger Award from the Planned Parenthood Federation of America, March 2009.<sup>69</sup>*

*“A total population of 250-300 million people, a 95% decline from present levels, would be ideal.”–Ted Turner, 1996, interview with Audubon Magazine.<sup>70</sup>*

*"The damage people cause to the planet is a function of demographics - it is equal to the degree of development. One American burdens the earth much more than twenty Bangladeshes ... This is a terrible thing to say. In order to stabilize world population, we must eliminate 350,000 people per day. It is a horrible thing to say, but it's just as bad not to say it." Jacques Cousteau, 1991, UNESCO Courier.<sup>71</sup>*

*"At present the population of the world is increasing ... War so far has had no great effect on this increase ... I do not pretend that birth control is the only way in which population can be kept from increasing. There are others ... If a Black Death could be spread throughout the world once in every generation, survivors could procreate freely without making the world too full ... the state of affairs might be somewhat unpleasant, but what of it? Really high-minded people are indifferent to suffering, especially that of others." –Bertrand Russell, in his book, "The Impact of Science on Society"<sup>72</sup>*

*"We believe that our goal for the United States should be no more than 150 million, our size in 1950. For the world, we believe our goal should be a population of not more than two*

---

<sup>69</sup> “Nightmare on Main Street!” Jeff DiSario, August 6, 2009.

<http://thenationalreport.com/?p=272>

<sup>70</sup> [http://www.jonesreport.com/article/04\\_08/28turner\\_911.html](http://www.jonesreport.com/article/04_08/28turner_911.html) .

<sup>71</sup> The Population Controllers: New American Magazine: June 27, 1994: p 7. Referenced from

“The Population Control Agenda,” by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty,

<http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

<sup>72</sup> The Impact of Science on Society: Bertrand Russell: 1953: p xv. Referenced from “The

Population Control Agenda,” by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty,

<http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

*billion, its size shortly after the turn of the century." – Negative Population Growth, Inc.<sup>73</sup>*

Another example of population control involves the use of the miracle pesticide DDT for mosquito and malaria control. Dr. Paul M'Yller won the Nobel Prize in Medicine in 1948 for its discovery. In 1970 The National Academy of Sciences stated,

*"In little more than two decades DDT has prevented 500 million deaths due to malaria."*

This would be about 23 million lives saved per year, or nearly one per second. However, population controllers didn't like this, so, despite its effectiveness, low cost, and proven safety, they determined to have it banned on false, environmental pretenses, such as the softening of bird eggshells. Alexander King, president of the Club of Rome, stated,

*"My own doubts came when DDT was introduced. In Guyana, within two years, it had almost eliminated malaria. So my chief quarrel with DDT, in hindsight, is that it has greatly added to the population problem."<sup>74</sup>*

In a speech, Victor Yanconne, founder of the Environmental Defense Fund, tells the story of a reporter who had asked anti-DDT crusader Dr. Charles Wurster whether banning DDT would result in greater use of more toxic pesticides, since DDT was the safest pesticide known to mankind.<sup>75</sup> Dr. Wurster's reported reply:

---

<sup>73</sup> "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

<sup>74</sup> Remembering Silent Spring and its Consequences: J. Gordon Edwards: a monograph: p 7. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>. Edwards piece available on RadioLiberty.com.

<sup>75</sup> Reported by Chairman John Rarick: House Hearings on the Federal Pesticide Control Act of 1971, pp 266-267, in Serial No 92-A: quoted in a treatise by Dr. J. Gordon Edwards: A taped interview with Dr. Edwards is available from Radio Liberty, as is his treatise: see also Environmental Overkill: Dixy Lee Ray: Regnery: p 77. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

*"So what? People are the cause of all the problems. We have too many of them. We need to get rid of some of them and this is as good a way as any."*

The reporter asked,

*"Doctor, how do you square the killing of people with the mere loss of some birds?"*

Wurster reportedly replied,

*"It doesn't really make a lot of difference, because organophosphate acts locally and only kills farm workers and most of them are Mexicans and Negroes."*

In 1972, the chairman of the EPA investigating committee, after having heard six months of testimony on use of the DDT, concluded that DDT was completely safe. William Ruckelshaus, Director of the EPA, who later became a member of the Environmental Defense Fund, ignored the investigation's conclusions and outlawed its use anyway.

Since then, millions upon millions upon millions have perished from malaria, heaps upon heaps upon heaps of dead bodies, heaps that would dwarf those found in Nazi concentrations camps, precious souls, who suffered, sweaty and delirious from debilitating fever, until dead, as their helpless families watched on, and were left widowed and orphaned. And the heaps of the dead continue to pile up, at a rate still estimated at about three million per year. Let's end the ban on DDT put in place by these diabolical Malthusians.

Population control is also shockingly a central pillar of U.S. foreign policy. National Security Study Memorandum 200 (NSSM 200), *"Implications of Worldwide Population Growth for U.S. Security and Overseas Interests,"* written by Henry Kissinger in 1974, details official U.S. policy to control the populations of developing nations for the purposes of maintaining stability, weakness and access to strategic minerals. The populations would be controlled by birth control primarily, and the threat of withholding food aid would be used to enforce implementation of birth control policies in developing nations. Kissinger was the National Security Advisor

and Secretary of State under Nixon at the time. This is the same Kissinger who said of the military:

*"Military men are dumb, stupid animals to be used as pawns for foreign policy." –Henry Kissinger, quoted by Bob Woodward in The Final Days, 1976.*

It is a general economic principle that declining populations induce economic depression. An average of 2.1 births per woman must be maintained for a population to remain stable. The populations of many western nations are also declining due to these population control policies being implemented domestically, and so economic depressions would be predicted as retiring workers are not replaced:<sup>76</sup>

- Germany, 1.37 births per woman, declining
- Canada, 1.5, declining
- Italy, 1.23, declining
- Greece, 1.3, declining
- Spain, 1.15, declining
- The U.S., 2.11, static.

Thomas Malthus, 1766-1834, one of the original modern population controllers, or, more aptly, population killers, said:

*"All children born, beyond what would be required to keep up the population to a desired level, must necessarily perish, unless room may be made for them by the deaths of grown persons ...Therefore ...we should facilitate, instead of foolishly and vainly endeavoring to impede, the operations of nature in producing this mortality..."<sup>77</sup>*

Who are these people, the population controllers, these population killers? They are mass murderers inflicting suffering on an almost unimaginable scale.

<sup>76</sup> Ed Vitagliano, "Birth Dearth," AFA Journal, April 2009.

<sup>77</sup> Killer Angel: George Grant: Reformer Press: pp 50-51. Referenced from "The Population Control Agenda," by Stanley K. Monteith, M.D., or Radio Liberty, <http://www.radioliberty.com/pca.htm>.

But the Pharaoh of Egypt at the time of Israel's Egyptian Captivity was perhaps the first implementer of population control, when he commanded that all male Hebrew children be killed upon birth.

*Exod 1:15-22, Then the king of Egypt spoke to the Hebrew midwives, of whom the name of one was Shiphrah and the name of the other Puah; and he said, "When you do the duties of a midwife for the Hebrew women, and see them on the birthstools, if it is a son, then you shall kill him; but if it is a daughter, then she shall live." But the midwives feared God, and did not do as the king of Egypt commanded them, but saved the male children alive. So the king of Egypt called for the midwives and said to them, "Why have you done this thing, and saved the male children alive?" And the midwives said to Pharaoh, "Because the Hebrew women are not like the Egyptian women; for they are lively and give birth before the midwives come to them." Therefore God dealt well with the midwives, and the people multiplied and grew very mighty. And so it was, because the midwives feared God, that He provided households for them. So Pharaoh commanded all his people, saying, "Every son who is born you shall cast into the river, and every daughter you shall save alive." (NKJ)*

Notice how it says that God dealt well with the midwives who feared God and refused to obey Pharaoh's orders of infanticide, which were very similar to today's partial birth abortion procedures, and to China's one-child policy. God honored these good women not only by giving them families of their own (houses) but by preserving their names and their righteous actions in His Word for all future generations to see.

### **Universities' crumbling morality**

- The University of Pittsburgh is amending its policies to allow men who think they are women (i.e., men with the mental illness known as Gender Identity Disorder) to live in a women's dorm and share showers and restrooms with female students.<sup>78</sup> Mothers and fathers, you may want to consider a different college for your daughters if this policy is still in effect.

---

<sup>78</sup> "University opens bathrooms to gender confused people," AFA Journal, Nov/Dec 2008.

- George Mason University students elected a gay drag queen to be their Homecoming Queen. Although this was an action of the students, it reflects upon the university for having allowed it.

## Gay Marriage

In 1996, the U.S. Congress passed the Defense of Marriage Act (DOMA), which defines marriage within the realm of federal law as the legal union of one man and one woman. DOMA also prevents states from being forced to recognize another state's same-sex marriages or civil unions. Since then, various states have moved to legally define marriage in their states. As of the end of the 2008 general elections, 37 states had passed their own DOMA laws; and 30 states had adopted constitutional amendments defining marriage as between one man and one woman. Massachusetts, New Jersey, New Mexico, New York and Rhode Island have neither legislation nor a constitutional amendment banning same-sex marriage; and Vermont, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Massachusetts and Iowa have legalized same-sex marriage.<sup>79</sup>

Maine's legislature passed a measure allowing gay marriage in 2009, and Gov. John Baldacci signed it. However, later in the year it was put to popular vote and rejected. The legalization of gay marriage has been defeated in every state which has put it to popular vote—31 states after its defeat in Maine in November 2009. But gay activists, and gay-friendly politicians keep pushing it anyway despite the popular will.

In 2000, the people of California overwhelmingly approved Proposition 22, which defined marriage as the legal union of one man and one woman. In 2004, San Francisco mayor Gavin Newsom, supported by the ACLU, defied the law and ordered the issuance of marriage licenses to same-sex couples. These were later annulled by the California Supreme Court. However, in May 2008, the California Supreme Court decided the ban against same-sex marriage was unconstitutional. Fed up, the people of California in November 2008 approved Proposition 8, which amended the state constitution to define marriage as the legal union between one man and one woman. This infuriated the small but highly-vocal gay community, and they began to protest in mob crowds and employ terror tactics.

The following occurred shortly after Prop 8 passed:

---

<sup>79</sup> <http://www.Domawatch.org> , a program of the Alliance Defense Fund. Refer to this site for updates.

- During a homosexual anti-Prop-8 rally in Palm Springs,<sup>80</sup> 69-year-old Phyllis Burgess bravely carried a Styrofoam cross through the hysterical crowd in a peaceful counter-protest. Homosexuals surrounded her, pushed her, spat on her, took her cross and threw it to the ground.
- White powder was sent to Mormon temples in Los Angeles and Salt Lake City.<sup>81</sup> The Mormon Church had contributed financially to the passage of Prop 8, which enraged the homosexuals, who had been protesting outside Mormon temples. The anthrax scare turned out to be a hoax. This was nevertheless a serious act of terrorism investigated by the FBI.
- A group of Christians who regularly prayed and worshipped in San Francisco's homosexual Castro District were attacked by a raging homosexual mob. They had hot coffee thrown on them and were spit upon. One girl had her Bible taken from a homosexual. When she asked for it back, he hit her over the head with it, pushed her to the ground, and began kicking her. Others had their coats stolen and were threatened with death. The homosexuals also blew ear-piercing whistles within inches of the Christian's ears, shouted obscenities, and molested the group by trying to pull their pants off and poke objects into their rears. Police finally had to escort them safely out.<sup>82</sup>

Homosexuals organized a National Day of Protest on November 15, 2008, protesting the passing of same-sex marriage bans in Florida, Arizona, and California during the recent elections. As reported by OneNewsNow,<sup>83</sup> November 14, 2008,

“Activist homosexual leaders are planning a day of protest this Saturday over losing the traditional marriage battles in three states. The homosexual movement for special rights has become louder, and in some cases violent, in the aftermath of losses at the ballot box in Florida, Arizona, and California. Florida Family Association notes the increased intensity in rhetoric from the self-proclaimed ‘champions of tolerance’ and diversity. The National Day of Protest's logo is a clenched fighting fist and features phrases such as ‘Fight the H8’ (Fight the Hate) and ‘Ready to Rumble.’ Florida Family Association notes the irony in that the homosexual movement that formerly preached diversity and tolerance has now

<sup>80</sup> Allie Martin and Charlie Butts. Elderly Prop. 8 supporter roughed up, filing charges. OneNewsNow. 11/14/08. <http://www.onenewsnow.com/Politics/Default.aspx?id=319132>.

<sup>81</sup> CNN.com. Suspicious powder, legal complaint add to Prop 8 tensions. November 14, 2008.

<sup>82</sup> <http://www.freerepublic.com/focus/f-religion/2133515/posts>.

<sup>83</sup> Charlie Butts and Marty Cooper. Radical homosexuals plan day of ‘intolerance.’ OneNewsNow. November 14, 2008.

become increasingly disorderly and aggressive, even intolerant, of supporters of traditional marriage by vandalizing property and staging protests at and inside churches. Matt Barber of Liberty Counsel says the demonstrations ought to be taken seriously... 'There have been threats of church burnings. There have been threats of violence, even murder against Christians,' he explains. 'There has been vandalism already of a number of churches.' According to an alert issued by the Florida Family Association, the 'radical gay leaders' have two goals in mind through the upcoming protest: one being to normalize homosexuality in all areas of American society, and the second being to 'silence everyone who disagrees with them.' The notice adds that the homosexual activists are refusing to accept the final vote as an expression of the will of America's people. 'It really amounts to homo-fascism, and so what we're seeing [is] they don't want to let the democratic process play out,' Barber adds. 'These people are anti-democracy, clearly.' Florida Family Association also believes the radical homosexual agenda is 'unapologetically "me" centered' and does not feature discussions about what is best for families, children, or the common good of society. Barber points out the Bible's contrasting view. 'Scripture says specifically, of people who are trapped in the homosexual lifestyle, ...that they are given over to a reprobate mind,' he concludes."

This is the scripture to which he was referring:

*Rom 1:27-32, Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting; being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful; who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are worthy of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them. (NKJ)*

These radical homosexuals are dangerously out of control. They are ungracious in defeat and keep coming back. They talk tolerance, peace

and love, but are highly intolerant, angry and filled with hate. It's becoming like Sodom.

After Proposition 8 passed, advocates of same-sex marriage filed three lawsuits at the California Supreme Court arguing the proposition was itself unconstitutional; however, on May 26, 2009, the same court which had previously declared a ban on same-sex marriage unconstitutional, declared the proposition to amend the constitution to define marriage as the legal union between one man and one woman constitutional. However, the gay marriages that occurred between the initial ruling that the ban was unconstitutional and the passage of Prop 8 were allowed to remain valid. This part of the ruling is nonsensical, and would be like slaves remaining in slavery after the 13<sup>th</sup> amendment was passed making it illegal.

The California Teachers Association contributed over \$1.2 million of its member's dues to defeat Prop 8, a fact which outraged many teachers. The Pacific Justice Institute subsequently launched [www.ChooseCharity.org](http://www.ChooseCharity.org) to educate and defend the rights of teachers "to opt completely out of their union and give all of their union dues, every single penny of it, instead... to a charity that's in agreement with their faith." That the teachers association would fight against traditional marriage also upset many parents.<sup>84</sup>

Most homosexuals don't even really want marriage. They are not monogamous by nature (infidelity rate something like 95%), and neither would they want to pay spousal support upon divorce, which, given their extreme promiscuity, would be expected often. Reportedly, only 5% of homosexuals marry in countries where it is legal (Belgium, Canada, Netherlands, Norway, South Africa and Spain). They are just using same-sex marriage as a stepping stone to antidiscrimination and hate crime laws to grant themselves special privileges, to silence their critics, for the corporate spousal health benefits, and to satisfy their need to have society legitimize and affirm their lifestyle as not abominable, contrary to God's Word.

If traditional marriage (one man, one woman) loses its legal protection, we would head down a slippery slope leading to marriages of any and all imagination, including same-sex marriage, polygamy, group marriages (polyamory), incestuous marriages (endogamy), child/adult marriages and possibly even marriage to or between animals.

### **President Obama's position**

---

<sup>84</sup> "Teachers angered by dues funding homosexual agenda," AFA Journal, Jan 2009; originally reported in [www.onenewsnow.com](http://www.onenewsnow.com), 10/27/08. Brad Dacus of PJI quoted.

President Obama is a powerful ally in the homosexual court. He promised to repeal the Defense of Marriage Act (DOMA), move forward with the Matthew Shepard Act (hate crimes legislation), push for the Employment Non-Discrimination Act (ENDA), and repeal Don't Ask Don't Tell in the military allowing full-blown homosexual practice in the military. He also favors pro-homosexual judges, including Supreme Court judges.

On June 1, 2009, President Obama proclaimed the month of June 2009 to be "Lesbian, Gay, Bisexual, and Transgender Pride Month."<sup>85</sup> Thus began the process of institutionalizing homosexuality (sin) in America, just like Sodom.

Obama stated of lesbian, gay, bisexual and transgender (LGBT) candidates he has openly appointed to his administration,

*"These individuals embody the best qualities we seek in public servants..."*

He also outlined a future partnership with the LGBT community.

*"My Administration has partnered with the LGBT community to advance a wide range of initiatives. At the international level, I have joined efforts at the United Nations to decriminalize homosexuality around the world. Here at home, I continue to support measures to bring the full spectrum of equal rights to LGBT Americans. These measures include enhancing hate crimes laws, supporting civil unions and Federal rights for LGBT couples, outlawing discrimination in the workplace, ensuring adoption rights, and ending the existing "Don't Ask, Don't Tell" policy..."* He ended the proclamation stating, *"IN WITNESS WHEREOF, I have hereunto set my hand this first day of June, in the year of our Lord two thousand nine..."*

He speaks of bringing equal rights to LGBT Americans, but in the same breath talks of enhancing hate crime laws which produce unequal rights. His support of LGBT unions also violates his sworn duty to enforce the law, as this leaves the Defense of Marriage Act (DOMA) unenforced. That Obama would reference the Lord's name along with a proclamation stating we should be proud of sinful behavior and set aside a month to celebrate sin is repellent. These actions will serve to fuel the destruction of even more lives through a practice so harmful that it kills half of all males before they reach age 42 and half of all females before they reach age 45. How could Obama celebrate this and be proud of this?

<sup>85</sup> [http://www.whitehouse.gov/the\\_press\\_office/Presidential-Proclamation-LGBT-Pride-Month/](http://www.whitehouse.gov/the_press_office/Presidential-Proclamation-LGBT-Pride-Month/)

*Isa 5:20, Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! (KJV)*

Further illustrating Obama's pro-homosexual position was his appointment of Kevin Jennings, founder of the Gay, Lesbian, Straight, Education Network (GLSEN), to be Assistant Deputy Secretary of Education in charge of the Office of Safe and Drug Free Schools. GLSEN has been promoting the homosexual lifestyle in schools and colleges for many years, including establishing hundreds of homosexual clubs and preparing pro-homosexual curriculum for children. Under his leadership, a school would not be considered safe until all school children accept homosexuality. More about Jennings:

- He was a heavy marijuana user in high school and college.
- He did not report the homosexual statutory rape of a 15-year-old boy by an older man.
- He is a homosexual who is contemptuous of Christians and God. He said, *"Before, I was the one who was failing God; now I decided He was the one who had failed me. I decided I had done nothing wrong: He had, by promising to 'set you free' and never delivering on His promise. What had He done for me, other than make me feel shame and guilt? Squat. Screw you, buddy - I don't need you around anymore, I decided."*
- He called Christians *"hard-core bigots"* who should *"drop dead,"* and said what he really wanted to tell them was, *"f\*\*\* you!"*

Obama's government healthcare plan would also include coverage for sex change operations and abortions. Thus, an old man might be denied health care for a heart condition while a homosexual is approved for a sex change operation; or an old woman might be denied health care for a stroke while a young girl is approved to murder her unborn child. Using our tax dollars.

\* \* \*

Obama promised to repeal the military's Don't Ask Don't Tell policy on homosexuality. On December 1, 2011, the Senate "voted 93-7 to approve a defense authorization bill that includes a provision which not only repeals the military law on sodomy, it also repeals the military ban on sex

with animals--or bestiality.”<sup>86</sup> If approved by the House, it would be signed into law by Obama.

\* \* \*

Obama nominated Sonia Sotomayor and Elena Kagan for Supreme Court Justices, and they were confirmed and assumed office in 2009 and 2010, respectively. They are now two of nine justices who will serve for life.

While less is known about Sotomayor, Kagan is very much a pro-homosexual and pro-abortion advocate.

Kagan,<sup>87</sup>

- Attended Harvard's first Gay, Lesbian, Bi-sexual, Transgender alumni reunion dinner in September 2003;
- Attended a two-day conference held by Lambda, the Lesbian student group at the Harvard Law School in October 2003.
- Attended, and served as moderator, at the 25th reunion of the Harvard Gay and Lesbian Caucus, titled "A Celebration of LGBT Life at Harvard," in September 2008.
- Is reportedly a lesbian. The Harvard Law Review *Epinions* in January 2006, when Kagan was Dean of Harvard Law School (HLS), stated,
  - *"HLS has changed over the years, and the newest, high-energy dean is Elena Kagan, a lesbian professor who has revitalized the community."*
- Disallowed military recruiters on Harvard campus because of its “don't ask, don't tell” policy on homosexuality, which she called, “a profound wrong — a moral injustice of the first order.” This case went all the way to the Supreme Court, where it was defeated unanimously; schools receiving federal support cannot deny military recruiters on campuses. Kagan’s judgment is so poor and personally biased that if she had been a justice on this court, she would have been in disagreement with an otherwise unanimous court; even the liberal justices.

---

<sup>86</sup> Pete Winn, “Senate Approves Bill that Legalizes Sodomy and Bestiality in U.S. Military,” December 1, 2011, <http://cnsnews.com/news/article/senate-approves-bill-legalizes-sodomy-and-bestiality-us-military>.

<sup>87</sup> Chaplain Klingenschmitt, The Pray in Jesus Name Project, email, 6/10/10.

- Is against federal funding for religious organizations who provide care for pregnant teens, but is in favor of funding abortion clinics such as Planned Parenthood who terminate those pregnancies.

\* \* \*

The late Senator Edward Kennedy of Massachusetts was also a powerful proponent of the homosexual agenda. Did he make it to heaven after fighting against God and for the devil—for abortion and homosexuality—for so many years? I wonder...

\* \* \*

As we enter into a more and more global world, homosexuals are also pushing to make their dangerous deathstyle a human right.

How could we have yielded so much to such a degenerate group comprising just 1-2% of the population that seeks the destruction of our children?

A federal constitutional amendment protecting traditional marriage would end this battle. Support it.

Tolerance of homosexuality and tolerance of true Christianity cannot coexist. There can only be tolerance of homosexuality if there is intolerance of true Christianity. A society increasingly tolerant of homosexuality will be increasing intolerant of true Christianity.

*2 Tim 3:1-5, This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. (KJV)*

*Jer 6:15, Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore they shall fall among them that fall: at the time that I visit them they shall be cast down, saith the LORD. (KJV)*

### 3 Abortion

*Jer 1:5, "Before I formed you in the womb I knew you, before you were born I set you apart..." (NIV)*

#### Facts on abortion worldwide

- There are about 42 million abortions per year, or about 1.3 every second.<sup>1</sup>
- About one in five pregnancies ends in abortion.<sup>2</sup>
- There is about 1 abortion per woman, on average.<sup>3</sup>
- About five million women are hospitalized each year for abortion complications such as hemorrhage and infection.<sup>4</sup>
- Over one in a thousand mothers having abortions will die from it.
- About 67,000 women die per year from abortion complications. That's about 8 per hour, or 13% of all maternal deaths.<sup>5</sup>
- The mothers of about 220,000 children die per year from abortion.<sup>6</sup> That's about one child becoming motherless from abortion every 2.5 minutes.
- Over one third of pregnancies are unplanned.
- 99.3% of abortions are because the mother feels it would affect her lifestyle.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Data from 2005. Sedgh G, Henshaw S, Singh S, Åhman E, Shah IH. Induced abortion: rates and trends worldwide. *Lancet* 2007; 370: 1338–45. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>2</sup> Sedgh G, Henshaw S, Singh S, Åhman E, Shah IH. Induced abortion: rates and trends worldwide. *Lancet* 2007; 370: 1338–45. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>3</sup> Center for Bioethical Reform (abortionno.org), cited in [www.abortiontv.com](http://www.abortiontv.com).

<sup>4</sup> Singh S, Hospital admissions resulting from unsafe abortion: estimates from 13 developing countries, *Lancet*, 2006, 368(955):1887–1892. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>5</sup> World Health Organization (WHO). Unsafe abortion: global and regional estimates of incidence of unsafe abortion and associated mortality in 2003, Geneva: WHO, 2007. In Press. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>6</sup> Grimes DA et al., Unsafe abortion: the preventable pandemic, *Lancet*, 2006, 368(9550):1908–1919. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>7</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 186.

*Prov 6:16-18, These six things the LORD hates, yes, seven are an abomination to Him: A proud look, a lying tongue, hands that shed innocent blood, A heart that devises wicked plans, feet that are swift in running to evil, (NKJ)*

## **Facts on abortion in the U.S.**

*Where is the most dangerous place for an American to be today? In his or her mother's womb.*

- There are about 1.21 million abortions per year, or about one every 26 seconds.<sup>8</sup>
- 45 million abortions occurred 1973- 2005.<sup>9</sup>
- 15-25% of women having abortions will later develop breast cancer, versus about 10% in the general population.<sup>10</sup>
- Oral contraceptives such as the pill cause on average one or two additional “silent” abortions per year for each user (fertilized egg prevented from implanting in uterus),<sup>11</sup> and between 1.5 and 4.2 million total per year in the U.S.<sup>12</sup>
- Almost half of all pregnancies are unplanned.<sup>13</sup>
- 40% of unplanned pregnancies end in abortion.<sup>14</sup>
- 22% of pregnancies not ending in miscarriages end in abortion.<sup>15</sup>

---

<sup>8</sup> Data from 2005. Jones RK et al., Abortion in the United States: incidence and access to services, 2005, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2008, 40(1):6–16. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>9</sup> Jones RK et al., Abortion in the United States: incidence and access to services, 2005, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2008, 40(1):6–16. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>10</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 25. (Rate is about 10% in general population.)

<sup>11</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 74-75.

<sup>12</sup> S. Killick, E. Eyoung, and M. Elstein. "Ovarian Follicular Development in Oral Contraceptive Cycles." Fertility and Sterility, September 1987, pages 409 to 413. Cited in Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” p. 75.

<sup>13</sup> Finer LB and Henshaw SK, Disparities in rates of unintended pregnancy in the United States, 1994 and 2001, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2006, 38(2):90–96. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>14</sup> Finer LB and Henshaw SK, Disparities in rates of unintended pregnancy in the United States, 1994 and 2001, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2006, 38(2):90–96. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>15</sup> Jones RK et al., Abortion in the United States: incidence and access to services, 2005, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2008, 40(1):6–16. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

- Half of American women will have an unplanned pregnancy by age 45.<sup>16</sup>
- 17% of abortions are by teenagers; 33% by women ages 20-24.<sup>17</sup>
- The average number of abortions per year in states other than California are about 25,000; the average number of abortions per year in California are about 280,000.<sup>18</sup> That's about one every two minutes in California alone.
- One third of unplanned pregnancies are with women who have already had an abortion.<sup>19</sup>
- Two-thirds of abortions are by women who have never married.<sup>20</sup>
- Although blacks are only 13% of the population, they have 37% of all abortions.<sup>21</sup>
- Blacks are three times as likely as white women to have an abortion; Hispanics twice as likely.<sup>22</sup>
- 58% of abortions were by women using some form of contraception that failed.<sup>23</sup>
  - 13% of abortions were by women who reported they were taking the pill but it failed.<sup>24</sup>
  - 14% of abortions were by women who reported their partner used a condom correctly but it failed.<sup>25</sup>

---

<sup>16</sup> Jones RK et al., Repeat abortion in the United States, Occasional Report, New York:

Guttmacher Institute, 2006, No. 29. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>17</sup> Distributions published by the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, adjusted for year-to-year changes in the reporting states and applied to the total number of abortions in Jones RK et al., Abortion in the United States: Incidence and access to services, 2005, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2008, 40(1):6-16. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>18</sup> Centers for Disease Control and Prevention, cited in [abortiontv.com](http://abortiontv.com).

<sup>19</sup> Jones RK et al., Repeat abortion in the United States, Occasional Report, New York: Guttmacher Institute, 2006, No. 29; Henshaw SK, Unintended pregnancy in the United States, Family Planning Perspectives, 1998, 30(1):24–29 & 46. (Both cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>20</sup> Jones RK, Darroch JE and Henshaw SK, Patterns in the socioeconomic characteristics of women obtaining abortions in 2000–2001, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2002, 34(5):226–235. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>21</sup> Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).

<sup>22</sup> The Center for Bio-Ethical Reform; [www.abortionno.org](http://www.abortionno.org).

<sup>23</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 28.

<sup>24</sup> Jones RK, Darroch JE and Henshaw SK, Contraceptive use among U.S. women having abortions in 2000–2001, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2002, 34(6):294–303. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

<sup>25</sup> Jones RK, Darroch JE and Henshaw SK, Contraceptive use among U.S. women having abortions in 2000–2001, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2002, 34(6):294–303. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

- 13% of all abortions are paid with public funds.<sup>26</sup> That means taxpayers are paying for one abortion about every 3 minutes.

*Ps 106:37-38, Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils, And shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the land was polluted with blood. (KJV)*

### **Overview of pregnancy process**

A woman has two ovaries the size and shape of an almond which store her eggs. These are connected to her uterus by fallopian tubes, which are about five inches long and only twice as thick as a human hair. Every month she ovulates, which means her egg (ovum) is released from one of her two ovaries and travels down her fallopian tube to her uterus, which is the size and shape of a small pear. Her uterus is separated from her vaginal canal by her cervix.

If sperm makes it through her cervix to her uterus to her fallopian tube, and unites with her descending egg, it is fertilized and a new human life begins. When the fertilized egg begins dividing it is called an embryo. About a week later, the embryo is implanted in the endometrium, which is the lining of the uterus. At three weeks the baby's heart begins beating; at six weeks brain waves begin; at eight weeks the embryo grows to a point where it has all the parts it will have when it's born and the baby is then called a fetus (Latin for child).

It is interesting that when a baby girl is born, she will have all the eggs she will ever have in her ovaries. A man on the other hand must constantly regenerate his seed.

It is also interesting that when an egg is fertilized, and a new human life begins, this forever alters the number of human lives in the universe for all of eternity; that life did not exist prior to that moment; afterwards, it will exist for all of eternity. This is momentous and nontrivial.

### **Supreme Court case history**

---

<sup>26</sup> Henshaw SK and Finer LB, The accessibility of abortion services in the United States, 2001, Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health, 2003, 35(1):16–24. (Cited in Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).)

The following presents a brief history of the Supreme Court cases leading to the legalization of abortion in America:

- 1965. *Griswold v. Connecticut*. No prohibiting contraceptives to married persons. Based on a newly discovered “right to privacy,” which doesn’t appear in the Bill of Rights, but which the majority thought was somehow hidden in the constitution. This new “right,” which hadn’t existed for the previous 200 years, has since led to the legalization of contraception, abortion, infanticide, sodomy and euthanasia.
- 1971. *U.S. v. Vuitch*. No ban on abortion if mother’s physical or mental health is threatened.
- 1972. *Eisenstadt v. Baird*. No prohibiting contraceptives to unmarried persons.
- 1973. *Doe v. Bolton*. No prohibiting abortion if mother’s physical or mental health is threatened.
- 1973. *Roe v. Wade*. No prohibiting abortion. Based on the supposed right to privacy. Over a million unborn American babies have been killed per year since then, about 50 million up to 2009; this figure increases to 100-200 million if “silent” abortions from oral contraceptives are included.
  - During 1946 and 1964, 76 million “baby boomers” were born.<sup>27</sup> They will be retiring between 2011 and 2029. This is going to cause a tremendous economic strain, as there are no replacement workers for these retirements, and it will bankrupt social security, in which current workers pay directly to current recipients. The aborted babies would have filled the gap nicely, if they had not been murdered.
  - Surgical abortions since 1970 have cost the U.S. \$35 trillion in lost GDP; \$70 trillion if IUDs, RU-486, sterilization and abortifacients are included.<sup>28</sup>
- 1976. *Planned Parenthood v. Danforth*. No informing husband or parent of abortion. Thus a father has no say as to whether his own child is killed or not, and the parents of a minor have no say as to whether their daughter should undergo surgery to kill her child, their grandchild.

---

<sup>27</sup>

[http://www.escapehomes.com/articles/Baby\\_Boomers\\_Statistics\\_on\\_Empty\\_Nests\\_and\\_Retirement.htm](http://www.escapehomes.com/articles/Baby_Boomers_Statistics_on_Empty_Nests_and_Retirement.htm)

<sup>28</sup> Dennis M. Howard, “The \$35 Trillion Elephant in the Living Room,” <http://www.movementforabetteramerica.org/>

Note that effectively today the right to contraception has merged with the right to abortion, as abortifacient contraceptives (like the pill) cause abortion.

*Ps 139:13-14, For you created my inmost being; you knit me together in my mother's womb. I praise you because I am fearfully and wonderfully made; your works are wonderful, I know that full well. (NIV)*

## Abortion procedures and their side effects

There are two types of abortion, surgical and chemical.

### Surgical abortion

- Suction Abortion. Up to 12 weeks. A steel device called a speculum is inserted into the girl's vagina and then opened, exposing her cervix at the end of her vaginal canal. Her cervix separates her vagina and her uterus, where the unborn child resides. Another steel device called a tenaculum is clamped to her cervix to hold it. Pointed steel rods of increasing diameter are then forcibly inserted into her cervical canal, which is tightly closed, to force it open. A powerful suction tube with a sharp tip is inserted into her uterus and the unborn child is sucked out of her in shredded pieces.
  - Side effects. "...cramping, nausea, sweating, feeling faint... possible heavy or prolonged bleeding, blood clots, damage to the cervix and perforation of the uterus... Infection due to retained products... fever, pain, abdominal tenderness... scar tissue."<sup>29</sup>
- D&C (dilation and curettage). Up to 15 weeks. Same as suction abortion, except a sharp looped knife is used to scrape the unborn child from the girl's uterine wall, where it is then cut into pieces and removed. D&C is also used legitimately following a miscarriage; however, an ultrasound should always be done before this procedure to confirm actual miscarriage (sometimes what is thought to be a miscarriage is only a clot, or even one of two twins).
  - Side effects. "...cramping, nausea, sweating, feeling faint... possible heavy or prolonged bleeding, blood clots, damage to the cervix and perforation of the uterus... Infection due to

---

<sup>29</sup> American Pregnancy Association.

<http://www.americanpregnancy.org/unplannedpregnancy/surgicalabortions.html>.

*retained products... fever, pain, abdominal tenderness... scar tissue.*<sup>30</sup>

- D&E (dilation and evacuation). 15- 21 weeks. Laminaria, dry seaweed sticks, are inserted into the girl's cervix at least a day before the killing. The laminaria expand as they absorb fluid, thereby forcing her closed cervix open and exposing her uterus. The abortion is still entirely reversible at this point. Steel rods are inserted to further dilate her cervix. The baby is then cut into pieces and pulled and suctioned out of her womb. Sometimes the abortionist first cuts off a limb and lets the baby bleed to death;<sup>31</sup> this allows the baby's writhing and thrashing, a response to the excruciating pain he or she is experiencing, which can be bothersome to the abortionist, to subside.
  - Side effects. *"...nausea, bleeding and cramping which may occur for two weeks following the procedure...additional risks [include] damage to uterine lining or cervix, perforation of the uterus, infection, and blood clots."*<sup>32</sup>
- D&E (dilation and extraction); aka Partial Birth Abortion. From 21 weeks to birth. At this stage, the baby has toughened up making cutting and chopping difficult. Forceps are used "to twist one of the baby's legs and pull it out through the girl's birth canal. The ripping of muscles and breaking of bones cause the baby unspeakable agony, for even pro-abortionists acknowledge that seven-month and eight-month preborn babies feel pain."<sup>33</sup> Babies at this stage also would have an 80% chance of survival if delivered live, so the abortionist must be careful to kill the child before it is delivered out of the mother. The entire baby is delivered except the head. The abortionist then stabs scissors into the baby's skull and opens the scissors. A suction tube is then inserted into the opening and the baby's brains are sucked out, collapsing the skull. The now lifeless baby is then pulled from his or her mother and discarded as trash.
  - Side effects. *"...nausea, bleeding and cramping which may occur for two weeks following the procedure...additional risks [include] damage to uterine lining or cervix, perforation of the uterus, infection, and blood clots...[and] additional emotional problems because of further fetal development."*<sup>34</sup>

<sup>30</sup> American Pregnancy Association.

<http://www.americanpregnancy.org/unplannedpregnancy/surgicalabortions.html>.

<sup>31</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 5.

<sup>32</sup> American Pregnancy Association.

<http://www.americanpregnancy.org/unplannedpregnancy/surgicalabortions.html>.

<sup>33</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 7.

<sup>34</sup> American Pregnancy Association.

<http://www.americanpregnancy.org/unplannedpregnancy/surgicalabortions.html>.

- Saline abortion. 2<sup>nd</sup> trimester. Salt or urea is injected into the girl's uterus. "The baby breathes and swallows this concentration and dies painfully over a period of hours from salt poisoning, dehydration, brain hemorrhage and convulsions...Many mothers...report feeling the baby's movements increase to a desperate frenzy as his or her skin and mucous membranes are scalded and he or she dies in unspeakably agony"<sup>35</sup> One mother said, "I...felt my baby thrash inside me for over an hour."<sup>36</sup> The baby's skin is burned to a cherry-red color. Surprisingly, some strong babies actually survive this cruelty for a while after being delivered, gasping for air, cold and wet, in terrible pain, only to be left to slowly die.
  - Side effects. "...nausea, bleeding and cramping which may occur for two weeks following the procedure...additional risks [include] damage to uterine lining or cervix, perforation of the uterus, infection, and blood clots...[and] emotional problems because of further fetal development."<sup>37</sup> And accidental poisoning of mother with the salt solution.
- Hysterotomy abortion. 3rd trimester. A C-section is performed and the baby removed from the mother. The baby is set aside to slowly die.
- Intercardiac injection abortion. 16 weeks. A long needle is inserted through the mother and into the baby's heart. Potassium chloride is injected causing immediate cardiac arrest.
  - This procedure is also sometimes used to selectively kill "surplus" babies, as following *in-vitro* fertilization (IVF). In IVF, multiple embryos are injected into the woman's uterus because the probability of a single embryo implanting is so low. But sometimes multiple embryos implant and survive, sometimes as many as eight. It is then argued that some must be killed to increase the survivability of the others.<sup>38</sup>
- Menstrual extraction. This is a suction or D&C abortion procedure used when a woman suspects pregnancy, but pregnancy is not medically confirmed. It can therefore be used to sidestep laws against abortion, as it operates under the guise of "menstrual regulation." It also lessens guilt felt by the mother, as she remains ignorant, and causes abortion statistics to be biased low, as these are not counted as abortions.<sup>39</sup>

<sup>35</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 6.

<sup>36</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 16.5 insert.

<sup>37</sup> American Pregnancy Association.

<http://www.americanpregnancy.org/unplannedpregnancy/surgicalabortions.html>.

<sup>38</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 10,14.

<sup>39</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 10-14.

*The American Medical Association in 1871 described abortionists as, “educated assassins... monsters of iniquity.”<sup>40</sup>*

*Amos 1:13, Thus saith the LORD; For three transgressions of the children of Ammon, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they have ripped up the women with child of Gilead, that they might enlarge their border [become rich]: (KJV)*

### **Medical complications to surgical abortions**

Abortions without complications are almost unheard of.<sup>41</sup>

- 2-3% suffer perforated uteruses.
- 1% suffer cervical lacerations.
- 15-25% develop breast cancer versus about 10% in general population (an extra 60-180 thousand cases per year through abortion).
- 1.5% will get life-threatening pelvic inflammatory disease (PID), an infection of their reproductive organs, which is life threatening (about 6% of pregnant women have chlamydia,<sup>42</sup> and 25% of women who abort with chlamydia will get PID).
- At least 5% will suffer severe psychiatric disturbances.
- Psychiatric visits are eight times more frequent.
- 20% consider suicide versus about 12% who do not abort.
- Cervical, ovarian and liver cancer risks more than double after one abortion, and quadruple after more.
- About 0.16% of the mothers die worldwide (0.01% in U.S.).
- Placenta previa (superimposition of placenta and cervical opening causing severe hemorrhaging during labor) risk increases by about 10 fold.
- Ectopic pregnancy (implantation of embryo in location other than uterine wall, such as fallopian tube) risk increases.
- Endometritis (inflammation of uterine wall) risk increases.

<sup>40</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 2.

<sup>41</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 22-25,28-29.

<sup>42</sup> Healthy News Service, “CDC: New Data Show Heavy Impact of Chlamydia on U.S. Men and Women, Particularly Young People,” July 16, 2005. <http://www.healthy.net/scr/news.asp?Id=7784>

- Other complications are cramping, nausea, sweating, feeling faint, bleeding, blood clots, infection, fever, pain, abdominal tenderness, scarring, emotional distress, trauma, guilt and depression.
- And all of these can lead to later, more severe complications such as hysterectomies and infertility.
- David Reardon's 1994 study found that women who abort have more frequent psychological problems, such as suicide attempts (28%); hysterical outbreaks (51%); loss of self esteem (82%); eating disorders (39%) and loss of pleasure during intercourse (59%).<sup>43</sup>

*Prov 24:11-12, Rescue those being led away to death; hold back those staggering toward slaughter. (NIV)*

### **Chemical abortions: abortifacients**

Abortifacients act to chemically abort human life. They are sometimes given more innocent-sounding names like, "menses regulators," "post-coital contraceptives," "emergency contraceptives," "morning after pill," and "contragestives."<sup>44</sup> But don't be fooled. They chemically abort human life.

- Oral contraceptives. These are pills taken orally. They work by using female hormones to inhibit ovulation, which is the release of an egg (ovum) from the ovary. No egg, no pregnancy. These also thicken the mucous of the cervix, making it more difficult for sperm to pass, and affect the lining of the uterus, making it more difficult for embryo implantation, should an egg get through, and become fertilized, which occasionally happens. It is in the latter instances in which oral contraceptives cause abortions. OCs cause on average one or two "silent" abortions per year for each user,<sup>45</sup> and between 1.5 and 4.2 million total per year in the U.S.<sup>46</sup>
  - *Side effects. Irregular menstrual bleeding, nausea, weight gain, headaches, dizziness, breast tenderness, mood changes and blood clots.*<sup>47</sup> *Blood clots can lead to stroke (if the clot lodges in the brain) and heart attack (if the clot lodges in the heart).*

<sup>43</sup> "Psychological Reactions Reported After Abortion." The Post-Abortion Review, Fall 1994, pages 4-8. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 29.

<sup>44</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 83.

<sup>45</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 74-75.

<sup>46</sup> S. Killick, E. Eyong, and M. Elstein. "Ovarian Follicular Development in Oral Contraceptive Cycles." Fertility and Sterility, September 1987, pages 409 to 413. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 75.

<sup>47</sup> [http://kidshealth.org/teen/sexual\\_health/contraception/contraception\\_birth.html](http://kidshealth.org/teen/sexual_health/contraception/contraception_birth.html)

- Intrauterine Devices (IUDs). These plastic devices prevent implantation of the fertilized egg in the uterus, thereby causing abortion. This is accomplished not only by physical means, but also by slow release of chemicals or hormones.
  - Side effects.<sup>48</sup> *Sterility; hemorrhage; perforation of the uterus, colon, bladder or small or large intestine; cervical lacerations, cervical dysplasia (developmental abnormalities); deep embedding of the IUD (a serious problem in developing countries, where women may have had the devices in their uteri for a decade or more); fragmentation of the IUD; dysmenorrhoea (painful menstruation); development of hydatidiform moles; menorrhagia (excessive menstruation); salpingitis (inflammation of uterine tubes); pelvic inflammatory disease (PID)(often leads to infertility or sterility and can be life threatening); higher risk of spontaneous abortion; 50-fold higher risk of death from infected spontaneous abortion and a 6 to 20 times greater risk of ectopic pregnancy;<sup>49</sup> cervical erosion; pelvis cystic masses and tubal infertility.*
- Norplant/Jadelle. These are hormone-containing tubes which are inserted into the arms of women. The hormone slowly releases over five years producing the same effects as oral contraceptives, namely inhibiting ovulation, thickening the cervical mucous and affecting the lining of uterus. Like OCs, these will also cause on average one or two “silent” abortions per year for each user. Norplant produced so many health problems and lawsuits that it has been withdrawn from the U.S. market. Norplant II, known as Jadelle, is its replacement. But it uses the same chemicals.
  - Side effects. *Changes in the endometrium (uterine lining); odd menstrual bleeding patterns; spotting between menstrual periods; missed or prolonged menstrual periods; dizziness; formation of blood clots; liver dysfunction; headaches; sudden weight gain or loss; ectopic pregnancy; nervousness; nausea; breast pain; abnormal body hair growth; high blood pressure; arm numbness; allergic/immune reactions; "migration" of the six polymer tubes; partial or complete blindness; liver dysfunction; and decreased sexual appetite.*<sup>50</sup>
- RU-486. Made by the former makers of the cyanide gas Zyklon-B used to exterminate Jews in Nazi concentration camps, RU-486 is a pill which acts to deny an embryo attachment to the uterus. It is used

<sup>48</sup> Literature review of the journals Contraception and Fertility and Sterility over the period 1980-1995; cited in Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” disk, Abortifacients.

<sup>49</sup> Willard Cates and John Ory. "IUD Complications: Infection, Death, and Ectopic Pregnancy." Controversies in Contraception, 1979, page 187.

<sup>50</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 80 and disk.

up to about six weeks. Approximately 900,000 babies were aborted by RU-486 from 2001 to 2007.<sup>51</sup> Thirteen deaths have been caused.<sup>52</sup>

- In one death, 18-year old Californian Holly Patterson died of massive infection from retained body parts. It was later learned that Planned Parenthood “did not educate her on how to administer the medication, did not have her signature on a consent form and failed to report her death as an unusual occurrence.” Sadly, she went to the hospital twice in great pain; the first time they gave her pain medication; the second time she died.
- In another, 16-year old Swede Rebecca Tell Berg died after suffering tremendous pain and bleeding. After eight days she was found dead in the shower; she had bled to death.
- *Side effects. severe bleeding, cramping, nausea, vomiting, pelvic pain, weakness, headache, dizziness, cardiac arrest and infection from retained body parts.*<sup>53</sup>
- Depo-Provera. This is a hormone administered every three months by injection. It acts to suppress ovulation, thickens cervical mucous and alter the lining of the uterus. Here again ovulation and fertilization can still occasionally occur; when it does the altered uterine lining prevents implantation and an abortion occurs.
  - *Side effects. Weight gain, loss of bone mass, jaundice, decreased glucose tolerance, convulsions, increased breast cancer risk, ectopic pregnancy, inflammation of blood vessels associated with blood clots, obstruction of the pulmonary artery by a blood clot, brain blood vessel disorders, partial or complete loss of vision, birth defects of subsequent babies (webbing and extra digits of the hands and feet; genital tract abnormalities; chromosomal anomalies), headaches, nervousness, abdominal pain or discomfort, dizziness or asthenia (weakness or fatigue). decreased sexual desire or inability to achieve orgasm, depression, nausea, insomnia, abnormal vaginal discharges, pelvic and breast pain, rashes, hot flashes, edema (swelling), inflammation of the vagina, chest pains, pulmonary embolus, allergic reactions, anemia, racing heart, fever, hoarseness, abnormal blood chemistry, rectal bleeding, breast lumps or*

---

<sup>51</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, Abortifacients, disk.

<sup>52</sup> J.C. Willke, MD, “RU 486 Has Killed Thirteen Women,” Life Issues Institute, <http://www.lifeissues.org/ru486/deaths.htm>.

<sup>53</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, Abortifacients, disk.

*nipple bleeding, paralysis, facial palsy, abnormal growth of the uterus, varicose veins and deep vein thrombosis.*<sup>54</sup>

- Syringes used for Depo-Provera injections are often reused in third-world countries without being sterilized, leading to increased disease transmission, especially HIV/AIDS. In some countries, as many as 70% of needles are unsterilized.<sup>55</sup>

## Breast cancer link

Abortion increases the risk of breast cancer because cancers are more apt to begin in cells which have not yet matured.<sup>56</sup> A large population of immature cells is produced in the breasts during the first trimester or pregnancy. These are intended for later differentiation into milk-producing cells. But abortion stops the cell specialization, leaving behind vast numbers of immature cells susceptible to cancer. This does not occur with miscarriages, possibly because the hormonal adjustments are not as abrupt and unnatural. Risk with abortion: ~15-25%; without: ~10%.

## Fetal pain

It is generally agreed that preborn babies begin to feel pain at 8-14 weeks.

- At seven weeks, the baby's lips are sensitive to touch.
- At eight weeks, the baby's eyelids and palms are sensitive to touch, and he adjusts his position in apparent moves to make himself more comfortable.
- At nine weeks, the baby will grasp something placed in his palm.
- At ten weeks, all parts of the baby's body are sensitive to touch.
- At eleven weeks, the baby will squint at bright light.<sup>57</sup>

Real time ultrasonography, fetoscopy, fetal EKG and EEG clearly show a preborn baby responds to pain, touch, sound and light.

The real-time ultrasound video Silent Scream<sup>58</sup> graphically shows a baby at twelve week's development being aborted. The baby is in intense pain, screaming silently as he is ripped apart limb by limb, writhing violently in a desperate effort to avoid the cold, metal, alien instrument seeking his

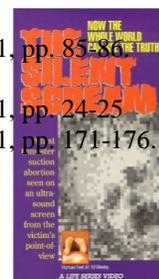
<sup>54</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 85-86.

<sup>55</sup> Marvin Olasky, "War, peace and people," World Magazine, 2/28/09/

<sup>56</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 24-25.

<sup>57</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 171-176.

<sup>58</sup> Silent Scream, American Portrait Films International, 1984, Cleveland.



death. There are 1.3 abortions per second worldwide. This is a continuous holocaust of silent, screaming agony of unimaginable proportions. No doubt God hears the continuous screams of these innocents. Judgment cannot be far behind.

*Luke 17:1-2, Then said he [Jesus] unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe unto him, through whom they come! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. (KJV)*

Are you a girl or woman contemplating abortion? Don't do it. Have you had one already? Jesus Christ, God in flesh, died so that your sins could be forgiven, taking on Himself the punishment due you, but He rose from the dead and is alive today. Repent of your sins, acknowledge your need for forgiveness, receive Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior.

### **The killing of abortionist George Tiller**

George Tiller and his clinic killed perhaps 60,000 unborn, many of whom were late-term children who would have survived outside the womb. This would more than fill Dodger Stadium to capacity. He was fatally shot while passing out bulletins at his Kansas church in May 2009. This act was wrong and should be condemned. It gave occasion to enemies of the prolife movement to show contempt for its cause, which is to preserve life.

But there is a general principle in the Bible, which is the Word of God, that murderers are likely to be murdered themselves:

*Gen 9:6, "Whoever sheds man's blood, by man his blood shall be shed; for in the image of God he made man. (NKJ)*

### **Reformed abortionist Stojan Adasevic**

Serbian abortionist Stojan Adasevic performed over 48,000 abortions. He then began to have haunting dreams of a field filled with children 4-24 years old and a man in a black and white habit who said he was Thomas

Aquinas. He subsequently stopped performing abortions, became pro-life and returned to his Orthodox faith.<sup>59</sup>

### **What about rape or incest?**

What if I told you that you were going to be killed because of something your father did. Would that be fair or right?

Neither is it fair or right to kill the preborn child because of a sin caused by his or her father. It's not the little baby's fault. Once conceived, that child is a gift of God with a predetermined plan and purpose for his or her life. If given a chance, and raised in obedience to the Lord Jesus Christ, that child will be a great blessing and joy to his or her mother, and pleasing to God.

*Deut 24:16, The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers: every man shall be put to death for his own sin.  
(KJV)*

To kill what is a gift from God is to fight against God's design and plan. Could it be that the devil knows what God's plan might be for that particular child and, knowing of the great contribution that child will make to the betterment of humanity, tries extra hard to impress upon those involved to abort the child and thus frustrate God's plans? Could it be that the devil knows what God's plan might be for that particular *mother* and, knowing of the great contribution she will make to the betterment of God's Kingdom, tries extra hard to impress upon her to sin greatly thus frustrate God's plans?

Children are a gift from God. To abort a child would be like someone carefully making an exquisite vase, taking months to artistically craft it into an object of beauty. And then, when it is given as a gift to one who is greatly loved, that person takes it and smashes it to the ground. How will the giver feel? How does God feel when his gift of a beautiful, living child is smashed to pieces?

In any event, abortions attributed to rape and incest, so-called "hard cases," are extremely rare, amounting to only 0.09% of all abortions.<sup>60</sup>

Abortion also likely perpetuates incest abuse by helping to hide it.

---

<sup>59</sup> "He began to have nightmares," World Magazine, Nov 29/Dec 6 2008.

<sup>60</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 186.

### **What about exceptions for the life and health of the mother?**

Exceptions for the life and health of the mother include physical, mental, emotional, psychological and social health, to which a case can be made for anyone. Consequently, these exceptions translate into abortion on demand and should not be allowed.

It is ironic that a woman who argues for an abortion based on some frivolous “life and health” reason will invite even worse life and health problems from the abortion itself, given the extreme dangers of abortion’s potential side effects previously listed, which include potential infection, sterility and even death.

If the mother’s life were truly in immediate danger, such as might be the case with an ectopic pregnancy or cancer of the uterus, the absence of these exceptions would not prevent an operation to save the life of the mother where indirectly the baby is killed (e.g., removal of a cancerous uterus).<sup>61</sup> Thus these exceptions are not needed anyway. Abortions truly attributed to the mother’s life or health are also very rare, only 0.36% of total abortions.<sup>62</sup>

In addition to effectively legalizing abortion on demand, the abortion industry uses these unneeded exceptions as a tactic to begin the process of legalization of abortion in countries where it is illegal. Once legality in so-called “hard cases” is accepted, the scope of legality is gradually broadened.

### **What about handicapped children?**

Down syndrome children are extremely happy children and bring great blessing and joy to their families. The blind and deaf have been known to be very productive and even geniuses. We rightly go out of our way to accommodate them when born, with ramps and special facilities; why do some want them to be killed before they’re born?

These babies are gifts of God with a special purpose in life. They are of equal value to any other and created in the image of God. Jesus Christ gave His life for them as much as He did for any other. And God likely has a special love for these handicapped persons, and is able to more powerfully manifest his strength through their weakness. Many

---

<sup>61</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 184, 192-193.

<sup>62</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 186.

handicapped have a great love for God, for they lean on God, and God helps them; what they lack physically God makes up for spiritually and in other ways.

If a child is born handicapped and unwanted, there are thousands of loving families that would love to adopt him or her. If you don't want the baby, give it up for adoption.

In any event, these are rare, amounting to 0.24% of all abortions.<sup>63</sup>

It should also be noted that the probability of a child with a birth defect increases as the woman ages; the probability goes from 0.22% for a 15-year old mother to 6.71% for a 45-year old mother.<sup>64</sup>

A child who is aborted will still live for eternity, but he or she will not have had a chance to do the work God prepared for him or her. God's beautiful plans to use that life in a way to help others will have been dashed to pieces.

*John 9:2-3, And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. (KJV)*

*Eph 2:10, For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. (KJV)*

*Matt 25:34, Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: (KJV)*

### **A plea to girls and women seeking abortion**

God loves you and your child. Don't murder your innocent baby. You will regret it if you do. And if you don't, there will come a time years from now when you look back through the many happy years spent with your child and thank God on your hands and knees, in tears, that you didn't go through with it.

---

<sup>63</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 186.

<sup>64</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 198.

*Ps 127:3, Lo, children are an heritage of the LORD: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. (KJV)*

If you really don't want the child, you can easily put him or her up for adoption. There are thousands of loving parents who would provide a loving home for your precious child. And they and others will help you.

God loves you!

Don't be like the tens of millions of girls and women whose hands drip with the blood of the innocent.

If you have already had an abortion, know that God still loves you. Tell God you are sorry and will not do it again; ask Him for forgiveness, and He will forgive you through the Blood of His Son Jesus Christ, who died so that your sins can be forgiven, and rose again, and is alive today making intercession for us at the right hand of God.

*John 11:26, [Jesus said] And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? (KJV)*

Ultimately, except in the rare cases of force, abortions are in the hands of girls and women. If girls and women decide not to have abortions, they will cease, whether legal or not.

*Deut 30:19, ...I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: (KJV)*

### **A plea to men and women, girls and boys**

Men and boys, hear this: the women having abortions are not getting pregnant by themselves. *Don't have premarital sex or sex outside of marriage.*

Women and girls, *don't have premarital sex or sex outside of marriage.*

*Heb 13:4, Marriage is honorable among all, and the bed undefiled; but fornicators [sex outside marriage] and adulterers God will judge. (NKJ)*



## 4 A Little More on Abortion

### Horrific medical experimentation

Brace yourselves. These are monstrous acts of evil against our most innocent and defenseless.

- Third-trimester babies at Pittsburgh's McGee Women's Hospital were aborted alive and then packed in ice for shipment to medical laboratories for experimentation. A witness stated, "it was repulsive to watch live fetuses being packed in ice while still moving and trying to breathe..."<sup>1</sup>
- A female human embryo was grown to an age of 59 days in an artificial uterus before it died in this unnatural and ghoulish environment.<sup>2</sup>
- "In March of 1973, Connecticut's Attorney General testified before the United States Supreme Court that, at Yale-New Haven Hospital, a living, viable aborted baby boy had been dissected without anesthesia until he finally died."<sup>3</sup>
- The beating hearts were cut from living, aborted babies and put in a solution. The little hearts, meant to beat for 70 years, beat on their own for several hours before dying.<sup>4</sup>
- The heads of live aborted preborn babies in Finland were severed from their bodies and kept alive by pumping artificial fluids through them. The baby's heads lived for up to 30 minutes. Can you imagine the fright and horror and pain experienced in the baby's mind of having its head decapitated and kept alive? Below is a picture of a 21-week preborn, the approximate age of the babies who suffered in this ghastly experiment.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Nick Thimmesch. "Bizarre Cases of Abortions Gone Awry." *St. Louis Globe-Democrat*, June 19-20, 1982, page 5; Donald DeMarco. *In My Mother's Womb: The Catholic Church's Defense of Natural Life* [Manassas, Virginia: Trinity Communications, 1987], page 133. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 253.

<sup>2</sup> Donald DeMarco, Ph.D. *In My Mother's Womb: The Catholic Church's Defense of Natural Life* [Manassas, Virginia: Trinity Communications, 1987]. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 242.

<sup>3</sup> As described in Donald DeMarco. *In My Mother's Womb: The Catholic Church's Defense of Natural Life* [Manassas, Virginia: Trinity Communications, 1987], page 133. Quoted from Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Fetal Experimentation, disk.

<sup>4</sup> Bela A. Resch, *et al.* "Comparison of Spontaneous Contraction Rates of *In Situ* and Isolated Fetal Hearts in Early Pregnancy." *American Journal of Obstetrics and Gynecology*, January 1, 1974, pages 73 and 74. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 253.

<sup>5</sup> "Post-Abortion Fetal Study Stirs Storm." *Medical World News*, June 8, 1973, page 21. Also see Peter A.J. Adam, N. Ratha, E. Rohiala, *et al.* "Cerebral Oxidation of Glucose and D-Beta



These babies, treated as discarded garbage without any rights, are not even given anesthesia to dull the pain of these medical experiments.

*The babies "writhed and cried in agony, and when their usefulness had expired, they were executed and discarded as garbage."*<sup>6</sup>

## Chimeras

Chimeras are human/animal hybrids. Some examples:

- At San Francisco General Hospital the organs from aborted babies were removed, cut into small pieces, and put inside mice, where they grew to be little human organs. AIDS experiments were then conducted on these surrogate humans or chimera. This was all paid for by the U.S. government's National Institutes for Health, funded by your tax dollars.<sup>7</sup>
- Scientists in California have created mice with human brain cells by injecting human embryonic stem cells into the brains of fetal mice.<sup>8</sup> Procedures were in place whereby if the mice showed signs of

---

Hydroxy, Butyrate in the Isolated Perfused Human Head." Transactions of the American Pediatric Society, 309:81, 1973. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 253.

<sup>6</sup> As described in Father Paul Marx, O.S.B. Confessions of a Pro-Life Missionary [Gaithersburg, Maryland: Human Life International, 1987] page 111. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Fetal Experimentation, disk.

<sup>7</sup> Sandra Blakeslee. "New Medical Research Tool: Human Tissues in Lab Mice." New York Times, October 30, 1990. Also described in Mary Meehan. "Unborn Victims." National Catholic Register, January 6, 1991, pages 1 and 7. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Fetal Experimentation, disk.

<sup>8</sup> Rick Weiss, "Human Brain Cells Are Grown In Mice," redorbit.com, 13 December 2005.

becoming self-aware or other human characteristics, the experimentation would cease.

- In China, in 2003, human cells were fused with rabbit eggs to create embryos.<sup>9</sup>
- In Minnesota, in 2004, the Mayo Clinic created pigs with human blood flowing through their bodies.<sup>10</sup>

### **Embryonic versus adult stem cells**

Stem cells are cells that have the ability to change into any other type of cell (called differentiation or specialization), but have not done so yet. They can potentially be used to regenerate lost or diseased tissue and hence heal. They are found in the preborn (embryos) as well as the born (adults).

President Bush instituted a ban on federal funding of embryonic stem cell research in 2001, except for a few cell lines already in existence. State governments, including California, Massachusetts and Wisconsin, and private funds kept the research going anyway. On March 9, 2009, President Obama removed the ban, allowing tax dollars to fund embryonic stem cell research once again.

Embryonic stem cell research has as its premise the destruction of life, a human embryo, to cure or save another life. Embryonic stem cell research has been a dismal failure. There have been no successful cures or treatments developed in their use. In addition, after being transplanted, they tend to be rejected as foreign tissue and to develop into tumors.

On the other hand, adult stem cells, which can be gathered from an adult's fat, skin, bone marrow, liver, muscle, intestine, brain and dental pulp tissues, all without the destruction of life, have been very successful in producing cures and treatments. Adult stem cells can also be harvested from umbilical cords, placentas and amniotic fluid, again without the destruction of life.

---

<sup>9</sup> Maryann Mott, "Animal-Human Hybrids Spark Controversy," National Geographic News, January 25, 2005. [www.nationalgeographic.com/news](http://www.nationalgeographic.com/news).

<sup>10</sup> Maryann Mott, "Animal-Human Hybrids Spark Controversy," National Geographic News, January 25, 2005. [www.nationalgeographic.com/news](http://www.nationalgeographic.com/news).

## A comparison of adult versus embryonic stem cell treatments or cures<sup>11</sup>

Adult stem cell treatments or cures		Embryonic stem cell treatment or cures
<p><u>Cancers:</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Brain Cancer</li> <li>2. Retinoblastoma</li> <li>3. Ovarian Cancer</li> <li>4. Skin Cancer: Merkel Cell Carcinoma</li> <li>5. Testicular Cancer</li> <li>6. Tumors abdominal organs Lymphoma</li> <li>7. Non-Hodgkin's lymphoma</li> <li>8. Hodgkin's Lymphoma</li> <li>9. Acute Lymphoblastic Leukemia</li> <li>10. Acute Myelogenous Leukemia</li> <li>11. Chronic Myelogenous Leukemia</li> <li>12. Juvenile Myelomonocytic Leukemia</li> <li>13. Chronic Myelomonocytic Leukemia</li> <li>14. Cancer of the lymph nodes: <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>Angioimmunoblastic Lymphadenopathy</li> </ul> </li> <li>15. Multiple Myeloma</li> <li>16. Myelodysplasia</li> <li>17. Breast Cancer</li> <li>18. Neuroblastoma</li> <li>19. Renal Cell Carcinoma</li> <li>20. Various Solid Tumors</li> <li>21. Soft Tissue Sarcoma</li> <li>22. Ewing's Sarcoma</li> <li>23. Waldenstrom's macroglobulinemia</li> <li>24. Hemophagocytic lymphohistiocytosis</li> <li>25. POEMS syndrome</li> <li>26. Myelofibrosis</li> </ol> <p><u>Auto-Immune Diseases</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>27. Diabetes Type I (Juvenile)</li> <li>28. Systemic Lupus</li> <li>29. Sjogren's Syndrome</li> <li>30. Myasthenia</li> <li>31. Autoimmune Cytopenia</li> <li>32. Scleromyxedema</li> <li>33. Scleroderma</li> <li>34. Crohn's Disease</li> <li>35. Behcet's Disease</li> <li>36. Rheumatoid Arthritis</li> <li>37. Juvenile Arthritis</li> <li>38. Multiple Sclerosis</li> <li>39. Polychondritis</li> <li>40. Systemic Vasculitis</li> <li>41. Alopecia Universalis</li> <li>42. Buerger's Disease</li> </ol>	<p><u>Cardiovascular</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>43. Acute Heart Damage</li> <li>44. Chronic Coronary Artery Disease</li> </ol> <p><u>Ocular</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>45. Corneal regeneration</li> </ol> <p><u>Immunodeficiencies</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>46. Severe Combined Immunodeficiency Syndrome</li> <li>47. X-linked Lymphoproliferative Syndrome</li> <li>48. X-linked Hyper immunoglobulin M Syndrome</li> </ol> <p><u>Neural Degenerative Diseases and Injuries</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>49. Parkinson's Disease</li> <li>50. Spinal Cord Injury</li> <li>51. Stroke Damage</li> </ol> <p><u>Anemias and Other Blood Conditions</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>52. Sickle Cell Anemia</li> <li>53. Sideroblastic Anemia</li> <li>54. Aplastic Anemia</li> <li>55. Red Cell Aplasia</li> <li>56. Amegakaryocytic Thrombocytopenia</li> <li>57. Thalassemia</li> <li>58. Primary Amyloidosis</li> <li>59. Diamond Blackfan Anemia</li> <li>60. Fanconi's Anemia</li> <li>61. Chronic Epstein-Barr Infection</li> </ol> <p><u>Wounds and Injuries</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>62. Limb Gangrene</li> <li>63. Surface Wound Healing</li> <li>64. Jawbone Replacement</li> <li>65. Skull Bone Repair</li> </ol> <p><u>Other Metabolic Disorders</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>66. Hurler's Syndrome</li> <li>67. Osteogenesis Imperfecta</li> <li>68. Krabbe Leukodystrophy</li> <li>69. Osteopetrosis</li> <li>70. Cerebral X-Linked Adrenoleukodystrophy</li> </ol> <p><u>Liver Disease</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>71. Chronic Liver Failure</li> <li>72. Liver Cirrhosis</li> </ol> <p><u>Bladder Disease</u></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>73. End-Stage Bladder Disease</li> </ol>	<p><i>There are none.</i></p>

<sup>11</sup> From [www.stemcellresearch.org/facts/treatments.htm](http://www.stemcellresearch.org/facts/treatments.htm). See also [www.stemcellresearchfacts.com](http://www.stemcellresearchfacts.com).

One must wonder, why pursue a failing path which destroys life when a successful path exists which does not destroy life? Follow the money. Planned Parenthood's abortion factories, which sell the killing of preborn children, can add to their profits, their blood money, by selling the dead body too.

*1 Tim 6:10, For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (KJV)*

### **Babies used for body parts**

In addition to the effort to use embryonic stem cells to cure maladies, there are also cases where already-changed cells (like insulin-producing pancreas cells) are harvested from aborted fetuses, or where babies are conceived only to produce body parts for their older siblings, after which they are destroyed.

There are also cases where already-born babies are killed for their body parts.

### **Contraception**

True contraceptives prevent sperm and egg from meeting. These include condoms, diaphragms, sponges, spermicides, etc. Abortifacients kill after the sperm and egg have met to form a fertilized egg. These include pills, IUDs, hormone injections, etc. However, in a ploy of verbal trickery, abortifacients are now being called contraceptives as well.

Conception is properly defined as the moment of fertilization of egg by sperm, each of which are living cells with half of the genetic content from the mother and half by the father, to become a zygote, which is a cell with the full genetic complement of the resulting child. Once cell division begins, the cell becomes an embryo. The embryo gets implanted in the uterus about a week after fertilization. When an embryo has all of the parts it will have as an adult it is a fetus.

As abortifacients began to be introduced in the late 60s, conception began to be deceptively redefined as the moment the embryo was implanted in the uterus, instead of as the moment of fertilization, which comes well before implantation. This allowed the false claim that a pregnancy was prevented before conception, and made its usage more agreeable.

Nevertheless, abortifacients cause abortions, as they cause the death of a conceived human child.

Under the new definition, that conception doesn't occur until implantation, stating that life begins at conception is no longer accurate; life begins at fertilization. If you are speaking of when life begins, say "life begins at fertilization" to avoid confusion. Or, say "life begins at conception, with conception defined as the moment of fertilization of egg by sperm."

The use of contraceptives historically has been condemned in Christian churches. In the 20<sup>th</sup> century this position was largely reversed, except the Catholic Church. Natural family planning methods, such as Post Ovulation, Sympto-Thermal Method, Billings Ovulation Method and Calendar Rhythm act as alternatives to contraception, and in fact perform better than barrier contraceptives and as good as most abortifacients.

A woman's normal menstrual cycle is 28 days. Sperm dies after 2-7 days; the egg dies after only one day. The fertility window is thus only at most 7 of the 28 days, and is more typically only 5 days. Natural family planning uses various methods to determine when in a woman's cycle she is fertile or infertile. Factors in these methods variously include menstrual cycle timing, body temperature, and cervical mucous characteristics. For example, under the rhythm method, a woman determines how many days are in her longest cycle and how many days are in her shortest cycle (between periods). She then subtracts 20 from her shortest cycle to determine the first day of fertility, and 10 from her longest cycle to determine the last day of fertility. For example, if a woman's shortest cycle is 25 days, the first day of fertility is 5 days; if her longest cycle is 30 days, the last day of fertility is 20 days. Outside of these days she would be infertile. Adding temperature and cervical mucous assessments refines the timing even better.

Contraceptives have relatively high failure rates (average 17%). Abortifacients have lower failure rates (average 2%).<sup>12</sup> However, as mentioned earlier, a staggering 58% of abortions were by women using some form of contraception or abortifacient that failed.<sup>13</sup> Because of this high failure rate, abortion is effectively being used as birth control after the fact. The only true method of premarital birth control is abstinence. That is why God prohibits fornication, which is sex without the benefit of marriage. God loves us and knows what is best for us.

---

<sup>12</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 65.

<sup>13</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 28. Chart derived from data on Figure 21-2 found in "Facts of Life" disk.

### **Sex education increases contraception use which increases abortions and STDs.**

Sex education leads to greater use of contraception, which leads to greater sexual activity, which leads to greater numbers of pregnancies because of the inherent failure rates of contraception, which leads to greater numbers of abortions and greater numbers of sexually transmitted diseases (STDs). Again, greater contraceptive use leads to greater numbers of abortions and greater numbers of STDs, NOT LESS. But the public is being told just the opposite, that sex education and greater contraceptive use result in reduced pregnancies and reduced abortions and reduced STDs.

This is so important, and so intentionally kept from the public, I must repeat it a third time:

- Sex education leads to greater contraceptive use,
  - which leads to greater sexual activity
    - which leads to greater numbers of pregnancies because of the inherent failure rates of contraception,
      - which leads to greater numbers of abortions and STDs.

Even pro-abortionists admit this. Malcolm Potts, former Medical Director of the International Planned Parenthood Federation (IPPF), said, "As people turn to contraception, there will be a rise, not a fall, in the abortion rate."<sup>14</sup> Of course that is good news for his abortion factories, more grist for his mills, and naturally IPPF supports sex education and contraception use. This is happening not only in the U.S., but all over the world. Work to get sex education programs removed from schools.

### **Trend toward chemical abortifacients; STD vaccines**

The trend in contraception is away from preventing pregnancy by barrier contraceptives and toward ending it by chemical abortifacients, which have lower failure rates. Without barriers such as condoms, however, there is direct exposure to sexually transmitted diseases (STDs).

The trend is to solve this with STD vaccines. But vaccines include a host of other problems. Vaccines contain a cocktail of dangerous microorganism fragments (animal, human, manmade), poisons (notably the highly toxic metals mercury and aluminum) and sometimes even

---

<sup>14</sup> Malcolm Potts. "Fertility Rights." *The Guardian*, April 25, 1979. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," pp. 57-58.

viable contagions instead of deactivated ones. The result? A population which is dumbed-down, sickened, drained of energy and wealth as they seek to get cured, and prematurely killed.

Consider the HPV (human papillomavirus) vaccine Gardasil, intended to immunize against HPV. HPV is sexually transmitted and has a low probability of causing cervical cancer in some girls and women.<sup>15</sup> Despite the fact that Gardasil resulted in 7,802 "adverse event" reports during the two years following its approval by the FDA, its use is endorsed by our federal government. Ailments include nausea, paralysis and fifteen deaths. One 13-year-old girl developed a fever and felt pain her chest and abdomen shortly after getting her HPV vaccine. She developed pancreatitis and needed two surgeries. "I just feel let down by the government," her mother said. Over 26 million Gardasil vaccines were distributed worldwide, including about 16 million in the U.S. An estimated 8 million girls and women have received the vaccine in the United States from 2006 to 2008.

Other problems:

- It gives girls a false sense of protection against STDs.
- It will encourage promiscuity.
- It doesn't protect against all forms of HPV.
- Its immunizing effectiveness will likely wear off before a young girl even becomes sexually active.

Despite these serious issues, the Center for Disease Control (CDC) still endorses vaccination, stating, "The vaccine is routinely recommended for 11 and 12 year old girls. It is also recommended for girls and women age 13 through 26."<sup>16</sup>

But this should come as no surprise, as the CDC also recommends flu vaccines for pregnant women, which is absolutely *insane*, because the toxins can permanently damage a developing child and his or her brain, possibly even causing autism through the *mother's* vaccines.<sup>17</sup> To add insult to injury, the CDC recommends double doses of two toxic vaccines (swine and seasonal flu, so four shots of each) for children as young as six months, whose brains are still developing! The risk of the vaccine is far, far worse than the risk of not getting it. One really must look after one

---

<sup>15</sup> Should parents worry about HPV vaccine? CNN, July 7, 2008,

<http://www.cnn.com/2008/HEALTH/conditions/07/07/cervical.cancer.vaccine/index.html>

<sup>16</sup> HPV Vaccine Information For Young Women, <http://www.cdc.gov/std/hpv/STDFact-HPV-vaccine-young-women.htm>

<sup>17</sup> <http://labvirus.wordpress.com/2009/12/27/dr-stan-monteith-fatal-deception-parts-i-and-ii/>

self these days; the government cannot be relied upon or trusted in these matters.

### **What are they teaching your kids in public schools?**

First of all, they are not teaching them Christian morality and traditional family values. These have been purged from the textbooks.

But they are teaching them that “contraception, sterilization, abortion, premarital sex, adultery, sodomy, masturbation and even sex with animals are value-free and therefore involve human rights that no one can tamper with — especially parents.”<sup>18</sup>

Example curricula<sup>19</sup>:

*“Sado-masochism may be very acceptable... Some people are now saying that partnerships — married or unmarried — should not be exclusive. ... A fair percentage of people probably have some sort of sexual contact with an animal during their lifetime, particularly boys who live on farms. There are no indications that such animal contacts are harmful...”* –Gary F. Kelly, *Learning about Sex: The Contemporary Guide for Young Adults*.

*“Bisexuality is an openness to loving, sexual relationships with both sexes — our true nature ... Gay men, too, have many ways of making love. One may [graphic description of oral sex]. Or one may [graphic description of sodomy].”* – *Changing Bodies, Changing Lives: A Book for Teens on Sex and Relationships (in use in thousands of high schools since 1980)*.

*“Premarital intercourse does have its definite values as a training ground for marriage or some other committed relationship. ... I have known cases of farm boys who have had a loving sexual relationship with an animal and who felt good about their behavior until they got to college, where they learned for the first time that what they had done was 'abnormal.' Then they were upset ... Any of the farm animals may become a sexual object — ponies, calves, sheep, pigs, even chickens or ducks. Dogs are also commonly used, but cats rarely.”* – Wardell Pomeroy, *Boys and Girls and Sex*.

<sup>18</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 268.

<sup>19</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 268-269.

The Bible condemns bestiality and indicates God will harshly judge nations practicing it. Yet it is being taught to our children in public schools.

*Exod 22:19, "Whoever lies with an animal shall surely be put to death. (NKJ)*

*Lev 18:23-28, Nor shall you mate with any animal, to defile yourself with it. Nor shall any woman stand before an animal to mate with it. It is perversion. Do not defile yourselves with any of these things; for by all these the nations are defiled, which I am casting out before you. For the land is defiled; therefore I visit the punishment of its iniquity upon it, and the land vomits out its inhabitants. You shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments, and shall not commit any of these abominations, either any of your own nation or any stranger who dwells among you for all these abominations the men of the land have done, who were before you, and thus the land is defiled), lest the land vomit you out also when you defile it, as it vomited out the nations that were before you. (NKJ)*

Another program in use in over 1,000 public high schools “features color slides of sodomy and X-rated pornographic audiotapes of a wide variety of sexual perverts talking about the many rewards of their bizarre ‘orientations.’”<sup>20</sup>

The book “One Teenager in Ten” propagates the lie that 10% of the population is homosexual (the true figure is 1-2%). This book includes "case histories" that glorify homosexuality. One describes a 13-year old girl who was illegally molested by a 23-year old lesbian; another describes a 15-year-old boy who was illegally sodomized by an older drifter. In both of these criminal acts of statutory rape, it describes the children as being happy about the experience. There is no mention of the horrible consequences of the homosexual deathstyle such as the disease, depression and early death.<sup>21</sup>

Planned Parenthood has provided “Sensitivity Training” for schools which includes discussions of “Virginity, Oral-Genital Sex, Intercourse, Masturbation, Sterility, Group Sex, Homosexuality, Extra-Marital Relations, Abortion, and Nudity — with acquaintances, with family, with the opposite sex, with the same sex, and with close friends.” Some

<sup>20</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 270.

<sup>21</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 270.

schools penalize students with suspension if they fail to participate in these classes.<sup>22</sup>

Perversion is becoming institutionalized in America. America repent!

*2 Chr 7:14, If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. (KJV)*

These programs advise keeping parents ignorant of these teachings and provide guidance on how to deliberately deceive parents as to what is really being taught.

Of course none of this “education” reduces sexually transmitted disease transmission, pregnancy, or abortion. In fact, as mentioned earlier, *it increases them.*

The country of Denmark began forced sex education in 1970. By about 1985, “illegitimate births, which were supposed to drop, instead nearly doubled; abortion rates, which were predicted to fall with the ready availability of condoms and other contraceptives in grocery stores, actually doubled; venereal disease more than doubled; and divorces doubled.”<sup>23</sup>

The U.S. instituted mandatory sex education in its public school systems in the 1970s at great expense. The result: “teenage pregnancies soared, as 'sex education' spread pervasively throughout the public schools.

- “The pregnancy rate among 15- to 19-year-old females was 68 per thousand in 1970 and 96 per thousand by 1980...”
- “Soaring rates of abortion were in fact offsetting soaring rates of pregnancy. Between 1970 and 1987, the number of abortions increased by 250,000, even though the number of teenagers declined by 400,000.”<sup>24</sup>
- In 1969, less than 1% of pregnancies ended in abortion. In 1972, this had increased to 15%, and in 1979 to 30%.<sup>25</sup>

<sup>22</sup> Eleanor S. Morrison and Miln Underhill Price. Values in Sexuality [New York: Hart Publishing, 1974], page 100. Cited in Clowes “The Facts of Life,” p.271-272.

<sup>23</sup> Human Events, March 30, 1985. Cited in Clowes “The Facts of Life,” p.274.

<sup>24</sup> Thomas Sowell. “The Big Lie.” Forbes, December 23, 1991, page 52. Cited in Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” p. 275.

<sup>25</sup> <http://www.johnstonsarchive.net/policy/abortion/graphusabrate.html>

- 5% of 15-year-old girls had premarital sex in 1970; in 1990 it was 33%, over six times as much; for 15-19 year-old girls the rate went from 29% to 61%, over twice as much.<sup>26</sup>
- Why? Because sex education led to greater contraceptive use, which led to greater premarital sexual activity.
  - This then led to greater numbers of pregnancies because of the inherent failure rates of contraception, which led to greater numbers of abortions and STDs.

The rates for abortion, cohabitation, single-parent families, illegitimate births, teenage pregnancy, sexually transmitted disease, teen suicide, child abuse, and violent crime have all increased since sex education began. Sex education has wreaked carnage upon our society. The program is not only an utter failure, but it is systematically destroying the lives of our children and the future of our country.

School-based clinics have also been instituted in public schools. These clinics distribute condoms, conduct pregnancy tests, and refer pregnant girls to outside organizations who then refer them to abortion clinics. Parental involvement is deliberately avoided, and parents are deceived as to the real mission of the clinics, which is to reduce teen pregnancy through condom distribution and abortion referral. But, as already seen, condom distribution actually increases pregnancies, which increases abortions, which is the exact opposite of their supposed mission.

Parents should fight vigorously against these programs until they are closed. Until then, the only way to immediately avoid these harmful influences is to homeschool your children. Home schooling has increased from about 15,000 in 1980 to 300,000 in 1990 to 1.5 million in 1999, as parents have become aware of the destructive indoctrination occurring in public schools. Homeschooled children not only avoid exposure to poisonous teachings, but routinely perform better academically than public school children (scoring about 80<sup>th</sup> percentile on standardized tests compared to 50<sup>th</sup> percentile for public school children). They are also healthier socially, having avoided all of the worldly influences that destroy a person's character and self esteem. They are also better at critical thinking, having been taught didactically instead of dialectically, and more apt to question teachings which seem false. College professors engaged in indoctrinating students with lies such as evolution and revisionist history have noted this boldness with displeasure and have therefore tried to keep

---

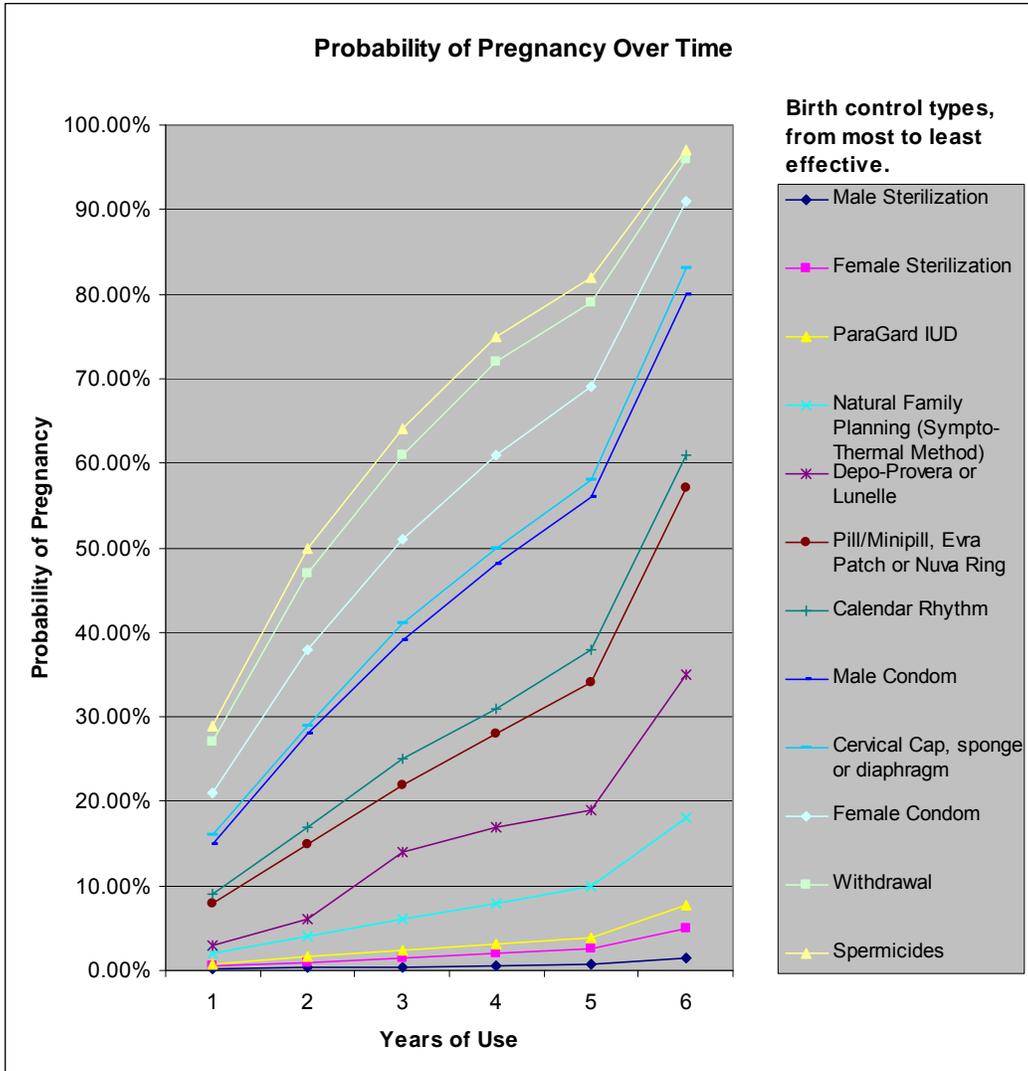
<sup>26</sup> "The US Family Stagger into the Sexy Secular Future." Family Research Newsletter, January-March 1991, page 1, Table 1 titled "Percentage of Women Aged 15-19 Who Reported Having Had Premarital Sexual Intercourse, By Race and Age — United States, 1970-1988." Numbers from 1988 to 1992 linearly extrapolated using 1985-1988 rates. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 276.

homeschoolers out of college because they don't meekly follow like sheep the way most public school kids do.

By the way, outlawing homeschooling is a step on the road to tyranny. Adolf Hitler outlawed home schooling in Germany in 1938. There have been movements in America to have it outlawed as well, but these have so far been unsuccessful. Keep fighting against them.

### **Contraceptive failure**

This graph below shows the cumulative probability of pregnancy over time. For example, a girl using the pill will have over 50% chance of getting pregnant over 6 years; a boy using a condom will have about 80% chance of getting a girl pregnant over six years. Contraceptives have inherent failure rates; it is only a matter of cold mathematics and time before failure occurs.



### Does a condom block the AIDS virus (HIV)?

While a condom is better than nothing, the AIDS virus is so small that it can pass through a condom’s microscopic pores. A 1992 Food and Drug Administration study which simulated the mechanical stresses of sexual intercourse revealed HIV-sized particles leaked through in one-third of the condoms tested.<sup>27</sup>

<sup>27</sup> Ronald F. Carey, William A. Herman, Stephen M. Retta, Jean E. Rinaldi, Bruce A. Herman, and T. Whit Athey. "Effectiveness of Latex Condoms As a Barrier to Human Immunodeficiency Virus-Sized Particles under Conditions of Simulated Use." *Sexually Transmitted Diseases*, July-August 1992, pages 230 to 233. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 42.

Put it this way: if condoms have a 14% failure rate with sperm (size 50 microns), and the AIDS virus is 500 times smaller (0.1 micron), how would you guess they perform with the AIDS virus?

Don't trust a condom to prevent HIV transmission. Or any other STD.

### **Sexually transmitted diseases**

Besides AIDS and pregnancy, premarital sex can lead to other STDs. The CDC estimates that approximately 19 million new infections occur each year in the U.S.—almost half of them among young people 15 to 24 years of age.<sup>28</sup> There are about 100 million people infected with STDs in the U.S.<sup>29</sup>

The only way to prevent transmission of STDs is to abstain from sex before marriage and be faithful afterwards. No fornication. No adultery. God knows what is best for us.

*Gal 6:7, Do not be deceived, God is not mocked; for whatever a man sows, that he will also reap. (NKJ)*

*Gal 5:19-21, Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; **Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that **they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.**** (KJV)*

### **Planned Parenthood**

Planned Parenthood founder Margaret Sanger was friends with Roger Baldwin, founder of the ACLU, an organization working hard to destroy Christianity in America. Sanger was a eugenicist, dedicated to improving the human race by selective breeding, ideas which sprang from the theory

---

<sup>28</sup> Weinstock H, et al. Sexually transmitted diseases among American youth: incidence and prevalence estimates, 2000. *Perspectives on Sexual and Reproductive Health* 2004;36(1):6-10, cited in CDC's, "Trends in Reportable Sexually Transmitted Diseases in the United States, 2007."

<sup>29</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 44.

of evolution and natural selection. Adolph Hitler had the same goal and respected Sanger.<sup>30</sup> Some of her quotes:<sup>31</sup>

- Sanger called blacks, immigrants and indigents, "'human weeds,' 'reckless breeders,' 'spawning... human beings who never should have been born.'"
- Of blacks, Sanger said, "We do not want word to go out that we want to exterminate the Negro population."
  - The 2006 census shows deaths of black Americans exceeding births.<sup>32</sup>
  - A 2005 study found that 62% of Planned Parenthood clinics are located in black communities. This increases to 70% if Hispanics are included.<sup>33</sup>
  - Although blacks are only 13% of the population, they have 37% of all abortions.<sup>34</sup>
  - These statistics suggest a deliberate effort to target black and minority women for abortion, consistent with Sanger's objectives.
- Sanger said the purpose of birth control was, "to create a race of thoroughbreds." "More children from the fit, less from the unfit -- that is the chief aim of birth control." And she considered blacks and minorities unfit. Unfit to live, that is.

Sanger's organization, Planned Parenthood, received \$350 million in government funding in 2008 to fund its death factories.<sup>35</sup> The American taxpayer should not be forced to fund abortion against their consciences. This funding should stop immediately. According to American Life League,<sup>36</sup>

- "Planned Parenthood is the largest abortion chain in America and has killed more than 3 million innocent children at its facilities.
- Planned Parenthood's top goal for the next 25 years is to push its agenda of promiscuous sex everywhere in our society.

---

<sup>30</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 9.

<sup>31</sup> Diane S. Dew, "Margaret Sanger Founder of Planned Parenthood In Her Own Words," <http://www.dianedew.com/sanger.htm>

<sup>32</sup> World Magazine, Straight Time, May 9, 2009, p. 53.

<sup>33</sup> Care Net Report, winter/spring issue 2009.

<sup>34</sup> Guttmacher Institute, [www.guttmacher.org](http://www.guttmacher.org).

<sup>35</sup> [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Planned\\_Parenthood](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Planned_Parenthood)

<sup>36</sup> <http://www.stopplannedparenthoodtaxfunding.com/>

- Planned Parenthood puts minors on birth control without parents' knowledge or involvement.
- Planned Parenthood has demonstrated a willingness to cover up for rapists and child predators.
- Planned Parenthood pushes pornography onto children with shocking and offensive websites, books, and literature.
- Planned Parenthood is openly hostile to Christianity, and regularly mocks people of faith.
- Planned Parenthood hurts women with misleading and dishonest medical information.
- And Planned Parenthood does all of this with over \$336.7 million dollars a year of your tax money.”

Much of this funding comes from the federal Title X family planning/birth control/population control program of 1970 and from Medicaid.<sup>37</sup> Both of these programs help to provide contraception and abortion services for low income women, many of whom also happen to be minorities.

### **Third-world women as human guinea pigs**

In all cases of initial testing of new abortifacients, third-world women are used as experimental guinea pigs. They are too poor to complain when problems develop, and typically they or their governments can be bribed into silence. They are also often given dangerous abortifacients which have been outlawed in western nations.

A typical example was the testing of Norplant on Bangladeshi women, who were not informed that the drug was experimental and could have side effects. Women were bribed to use the Norplant chemical-tube implants and to not report side effects. When women became sick, medical attention was withheld from them. When they wanted the tubes removed, they were told they would have to pay the equivalent of a year's wages to get them removed. "Many women suffered severe eye problems and even blindness, yet the summary reports on the effectiveness of Norplant contained no mention of these side effects."<sup>38</sup>

---

<sup>37</sup> Planned Parenthood Funding, <http://www.covenantnews.com/lefemine041031.htm>

<sup>38</sup> British Broadcasting Corporation. Horizon Television Show entitled "The Human Laboratory," broadcast of November 7, 1995; Elizabeth Sobo. "Norplant: Lab-Tested on Third World Women." Our Sunday Visitor, February 3, 1991, pages 10 and 11. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 81.

Norplant was developed by the Population Council, founded by population control supporters John Rockefeller III and Elton Kessel.<sup>39</sup>

## Artificial reproduction

There are a variety of ways man can intervene in producing babies from sterile couples.

- Artificial insemination (AI). Donor sperm is injected into the woman's vagina.
  - *Problems*. Typically involves masturbation of male who is not woman's husband. Involvement of persons outside the bonds of marriage produce a kind of fornication or adultery "once removed."
- In vitro fertilization (IVF). Sperm and eggs are put in a glass dish. The resulting embryos are injected into the woman's uterus.
  - *Problems*. Only about 5% of embryos survive.<sup>40</sup> To improve chances, multiple embryos are injected with the hope that at least one will implant. Sometimes multiple embryos implant, and then some are murdered to improve the chance of the others surviving to birth, or so it is argued.
- Embryo transfer. A woman who is not the man's wife is artificially inseminated with his sperm. Or IVF is used to create the embryo. The resulting embryo is transferred to the wife's uterus. Another variation is to have the embryo of a couple transferred to a surrogate mother.
  - *Problems*. Same as IVF and AI.
- Surrogate mothers. Husband's sperm impregnates woman who is not his wife, who carries child to term. Or, the couple's embryo is implanted.
  - *Problems*. Same as IVF and AI.
- Gamete intra-fallopian transfer (GIFT). A wife who has a blockage in her fallopian tube has her egg moved past the blockage where also her husband's sperm, collected in a perforated condom during intercourse with his wife, is introduced.
  - *Problems*. None apparent. Does not involve masturbation or person outside of bonds of marriage. No multiple embryos.

<sup>39</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 78-81.

<sup>40</sup> United States Congress, Committee on Small Business. Consumer Protection Issues Involved in In Vitro Fertilization Clinics [Washington, D.C.: U.S. Government Printing Office, 1988], pages 26 and 27. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 234.

Has success rate of about 25%, higher than IVF.<sup>41</sup> Accepted by Catholic and most Protestant churches.

- Low tube ovum transfer (LTOT). Same as GIFT, except the sperm is introduced through normal intercourse.
  - *Problems. None apparent. Same as GIFT.*
- Sperm intra-fallopian transfer (SIFT). Husband's sperm, collected in a perforated condom during intercourse with his wife, is injected into his wife's fallopian tubes.
  - *Problems. None apparent. Same as GIFT.*

There are a wide variety of other techniques, most involving combinations of the procedures described above.

On the one hand, thousands of babies are being aborted by fertile couples who don't want their babies. On the other, thousands of infertile parents are striving to have babies. Couldn't we just match the two groups up?

Consider also that it may be God's will for the couple not to have children, or at least not at that time. Abraham's wife Sarah was barren for many years until she finally bore Isaac; Isaac's wife Rebecah too until she bore Jacob and Esau, Jacob's wife Rachel too until she bore Joseph; Hannah too, until she bore Samuel. Samson's mother too, until she bore him.

*Gen 25:21, Now Isaac pleaded with the LORD for his wife, because she was barren; and the LORD granted his plea, and Rebekah his wife conceived. (NKJ)*

*1 Sam 1:11,19-20, Then she [Hannah] made a vow and said, "O LORD of hosts, if You will indeed look on the affliction of Your maidservant and remember me, and not forget Your maidservant, but will give Your maidservant a male child, then I will give him to the LORD all the days of his life...Then they rose early in the morning and worshiped before the LORD, and returned and came to their house at Ramah. And Elkanah knew Hannah his wife, and the LORD remembered her. So it came to pass in the process of time that Hannah conceived and bore a son [Samuel, who became a great prophet before God]... (NKJ)*

If you are seeking to have a child, go before the Lord in prayer and seek His will for you.

---

<sup>41</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 237.

## When is the eternal human spirit infused with the person?

Abortionists having religion will argue our eternal spirit,<sup>42</sup> the real and eternal person inside our temporary body, is infused with the person subsequent to fertilization, or even subsequent to birth. The truth can be found in the Bible:

- *Ps 51:5, Surely I was sinful at birth, sinful from the time my mother conceived me. (NIV)*
  - A soulless collection of matter cannot be sinful. The soul must therefore be present at conception. As persons, we inherit the original sin of fallen man at conception, and like David can say, “*I was sinful...from the time my mother conceived me.*”
- *Luke 1:15, For he [John the Baptist] shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. (KJV)*
  - Surely the Holy Ghost would not inhabit a spiritless collection of matter.
- The use of the personal pronouns “I,” “me” and “he;” and the possessive adjective “his” in the verses above which refer to the preborn undeniably ascribe personhood to the preborn, and personhood from the time of conception.
  - **I** was sinful at birth;
  - conceived **me**;
  - **he** shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from **his** mother's womb.)
- *Exod 21:22-23, If men strive, and hurt a woman with child, so that her fruit depart from her, and yet no mischief follow: he shall be surely punished, according as the woman's husband will lay upon him; and he shall pay as the judges determine. And if any mischief follow, then thou shalt give life for life, (KJV)*

---

<sup>42</sup> Some say “soul” instead of spirit; but more accurately the soul is our mind , will and emotions, whereas the spirit is the eternal person within us.

- This verse unequivocally equates preborn life with post-born life (life for life).

### **If in doubt, side with life**

President Obama has said he doesn't know when human life begins; that's "*above my pay grade*," he said. But he favors abortion right up to the point of birth. This means that even though he admits not knowing whether a preborn child is a person or not, he still favors killing it. From an admitted position of ignorance, he chooses to kill, not to let live. What does this say about someone's judgement? Senator Barbara Boxer (D, CA) is the same way, admitting ignorance but still siding with death, even the hypothetical partial birth abortion murder of a perfectly healthy child who still had one toe in his or her mother.

The Supreme Court majority in *Roe v. Wade* was no better. Justice Harry Blackmun wrote:

*"We need not resolve the difficult question of when life begins . . . the judiciary at this point in the development of man's knowledge, is not in a position to speculate as to the answer."*

The Court also admitted:

*"If this suggestion of personhood is established, the ...case, of course, collapses, for the fetus' right to life is then guaranteed by the [14th] Amendment."*

The 14<sup>th</sup> amendment forbids taking the life of a "*person*" without due process of the law (cannot take person's life without being prosecuted for having committed a capital crime) and provides for equal protection of all persons (cannot arbitrarily discriminate against one class of persons, like the preborn).

Nevertheless, the majority ruled in favor of Roe, who sought an abortion. Thus, like Obama, they too from a position of ignorance as to whether this preborn child was a person decided to side with death and not life. Not wise.

This would be like encountering a baby carriage, in which was the form of a baby under a blanket, blocking the path of a mountainous hiking trail. And, not knowing whether there was a baby under the blanket or not,

choosing to kick it off the side of the mountain instead of just leaving it alone or perhaps even helping. From a position of ignorance, one should always side with life.

Both Obama and the *Roe* majority expressed ignorance about whether the preborn were persons. But they had no doubt that the preborn would *become* persons. So, not only did they in ignorance of personhood side with death over life, but with absolute knowledge of *potential* personhood also sided with death.

But the preborn are living persons. There is no doubt that if you leave them alone they will progress from being preborn persons to being born persons. To kill them is murder.

### **Obama lies to the Pope**

During President Obama's July 2009 visit to Pope Benedict XVI, he "explicitly expressed his commitment to reducing the numbers of abortions," stated the Vatican's spokesman.<sup>43</sup> But that same week his administration was working feverishly to include abortion coverage in his government healthcare plan, which would increase the number of abortions by as much as 420,000 per year (1,150 per day). And, since there isn't enough healthcare to go around for everyone, the elderly may be denied medical services say for a heart condition while young women line up for free abortions at taxpayer expense.

### **Life at Conception Act and Personhood Amendments**

A Life at Conception Act<sup>44</sup> would establish human life as a "person" from the moment of conception, which is fertilization. The preborn would then be endowed with the right to life under the 14<sup>th</sup> amendment, which protects the life of all persons. It is logical that personhood begins at fertilization, for that is when the person's human life began as a distinct genetic entity, distinct from both the mother's and father's DNA.

The 14<sup>th</sup> amendment further states:

*"The Congress shall have power to enforce, by appropriate legislation, the provisions of this article."*

---

<sup>43</sup> Senator Rick Santorum, "Stop the Obama 'Abortion Reduction' Scam" letter, 2009.

<sup>44</sup> National Pro-life Alliance, Life at Conception Act, <http://www.prolifealliance.com/life%20at%20conception%20act.htm>.

Congress has used this power to pass laws defining corporations as persons; it could do the same with the preborn. This would instantly reverse the *Roe v. Wade* decision, which the court admitted was based in ignorance of the personhood of the preborn. Since this uses an existing amendment, as opposed to creating a new one, passing this act would require only a majority vote in both Houses followed by the President's signature.

There are also federal "personhood" amendment initiatives; however, these would be more difficult to pass on a federal level, as an amendment to the U.S. Constitution requires a two-thirds majority vote in both houses of Congress and must be ratified by 38 states.

There are also efforts to get state constitutions amended with personhood protections for the preborn.<sup>45</sup> Since abortion isn't mentioned in the U.S. federal Constitution, the 10<sup>th</sup> amendment allows it to be determined at the state level.

Going against these efforts is the federal Freedom of Choice Act (FOCA), which would nullify any state laws which currently ban partial birth abortion, mandate parental notification or consent, provide right of conscience and protect medical personnel from being forced to perform abortions against their consciences. FOCA would invalidate all of the pro-life gains made since *Roe v. Wade* passed in 1973 and result in an estimated 125,000 additional abortions per year and increased taxpayer funding of abortions.

President Obama said, "The first thing I'd do as president is sign the Freedom of Choice Act." Although Obama hasn't signed FOCA yet (pray he never does), his government healthcare plan proposes coverage for abortions. This essentially is equivalent to a signing of a Freedom of Choice Act. It slips FOCA in stealthily through healthcare legislation.

On January 23, 2009, Obama repealed the Mexico City Policy which had previously disallowed U.S. taxpayer funding of abortion overseas. Thus the U.S., already deeply in debt, takes on additional loans and debt to fund abortions in foreign countries.

Obama also appointed John Holdren as his science advisor. As an advisor, or "czar" as they're sometimes referred, Holdren did not have to face the scrutiny of senate confirmation. It was later learned that Holdren supported forced abortion and adding sterilization chemicals to drinking

---

<sup>45</sup> Initiative update may be found at <http://www.personhoodusa.com/>.

water as compulsory population control measures.<sup>46</sup> No kidding. He also proposed a “long-term sterilizing capsule that could be implanted under the skin” at puberty and then “might be removable, with official permission, for a limited number of births.” “Why should the law not be able to prevent a person from having more than two children?” he says.<sup>47</sup>

### **Created equal not born equal**

The Declaration of Independence states,

*“We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness.”*

The words used here are not “born equal” but “created equal.” Creation occurs at the moment of fertilization. Our founding fathers believed at the moment of fertilization our Creator endowed us with the right to life.

### **Subhuman marginalization**

Treating a person as less than a person, as subhuman, is the first step toward their oppression. This happened to black persons with slavery, with Jewish persons in Nazi Germany, and it is happening with preborn persons throughout the world today.

Once one group is marginalized, others soon follow, and are marked for death, like the elderly, the sick, the handicapped, the feeble minded, the unproductive, and political dissenters.

### **How many died having illegal “back alley” abortions before abortion became legal?**

Abortion supporters sometimes claim that 5,000-10,000 American women died a year having illegal abortions before abortion was legal. However, this was proven to be a lie. Actual figures were closer to about 150 out of about 150,000 abortions per year (about 0.001%).<sup>48</sup> Reductions in

<sup>46</sup> David Freddoso, “Obama's science czar suggested compulsory abortion, sterilization,” 07/14/09, <http://www.washingtonexaminer.com/opinion/blogs/beltway-confidential/Obamas-science-czar-suggested-compulsory-abortion-sterilization-50783612.html>

<sup>47</sup> Liberty Council letter, special message from Matt Staver, 2009.

<sup>48</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 17-20.

abortion mortality rates since then are not attributable to abortion improvements, but to general medical advances, such as antibiotics.

They lie in other countries too. Planned Parenthood's Brazil affiliate estimated that 400,000 woman died from illegal abortions each year. The actual figure was closer to about 200 for both legal and illegal abortions. And worldwide, no more than about 2,500 women die from illegal abortions per year. Pro-abortionists inflate the maternal morality figures of illegal abortion and deflate those of legal abortion to advance their cause politically.

### **Differences between abortion and ethical surgery<sup>49</sup>**

As previously noted, the American Medical Association in 1871 described abortionists as, "educated assassins... monsters of iniquity."<sup>50</sup>

A century later the ACLU promoted a National Day of Appreciation for Abortion Providers, in which abortionists, with the blood of innocents dripping from their hands, were to be thanked as heroes.

Severe discipline would result from an incorrect diagnosis by an ethical surgeon, yet abortionists perform "abortions" on women misdiagnosed as pregnant 10-15% of the time.

Additional differences between the quackery of elective abortion and ethical surgery are presented in the table below.

	<b>Issue</b>	<b>Ethical Surgery</b>	<b>Elective Abortion</b>
	Purpose	To heal	To kill
<b>Informed Consent</b>	Informed consent <sup>51</sup>	Required by law	Not required
	Husband's consent	Usually expected	Legally banned
	Husband informed	Always	Often legally banned
	Parental consent	Required by law for minors	Often legally banned

<sup>49</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, The General Definition of "Abortion," CD ROM.

<sup>50</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 2.

<sup>51</sup> Informed consent is informing patient of procedure and risks and getting their consent based on that understanding.

	Parents informed	Required by law for minors	Often legally banned
Pre-Operation	Facility licensing	Required by law	Not required
	Payment	Insurance	Cash or credit card
	Second opinion	Strongly recommended	Strongly discouraged
	Pre-op examination	Mandatory and detailed	On the operating table
	Correct diagnosis	Surgeon disciplined if incorrect	10-15% performed on non-pregnant women
Procedure	Procedure style	Individual, detailed care	Assembly-line
	Surgical training	Required by law	Not legally required
	Non-medical reasons	1% - 10%	99+%
Post-Operation	Recovery	As required	In the taxi
	Tissue disposal	Humane, dignified disposal	Incinerator or garbage
	Psychological trauma	Varies; usually rare	Frequent
	Counseling for trauma	As required	Complications 'fiction,' say pro-abortionists

### How many cell divisions occur from fertilization to adulthood?

Once fertilization has occurred, there are a total of 45 cell divisions (doubling of cells) until the single cell becomes an adult. Eight divisions have taken place by the time the embryo implants into the uterus, thus there are  $2^8$  or 256 total cells at that point. 41 divisions have occurred by birth, thus there are  $2^{41}$  or two trillion cells at that point. At adulthood, 45 divisions have taken place, thus there are  $2^{45}$  or 35 trillion cells, give or take; usually it's about 75 trillion cells or so for an adult.

Whether in the womb or out, the person began life as a single cell which continued dividing all the way to adulthood, but 90% of the divisions are in the womb.<sup>52</sup>

### Is the preborn baby part of the mother's body?

<sup>52</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 171-173.

No. At least no more so than a scuba diver is part of his tank because it is providing him oxygen, or part of a pool because he is swimming in it. Neither is the scuba diver's mother entitled to kill him because the pool in which he is swimming is hers.

For the child to be part of the mother's body, it would have to have the same DNA, which it does not. It has the distinct DNA of a distinct and separate human person.

### **Designer Babies**

Want a blond and blue athletic male child? Want a tall, dark-haired intellectual girl with an outgoing personality?

When the embryo reaches about eight cells, one cell is removed is removed and tested. If it doesn't meet the criteria of what these vain parents want (as opposed to what God wanted and created), the embryo is destroyed.

### **Other facts**

Just a little more and then we'll close this difficult chapter.

- Britain has allowed abortion clinics and condom manufacturers to advertise on television and radio.<sup>53</sup> Their campaign of using condoms to combat pregnancy has failed, as the contraceptive approach always will, because of pure mathematics: condoms lead to increased sexual activity, which, in conjunction with their inherent failure rate, leads to increased pregnancies, which leads to increased abortions and increased STDs. In Britain, in 2007, there were nearly eight thousand 13-15 year-old girls who became pregnant. Half of all pregnancies among girls 17 and younger in Britain end in abortion.
- Abortion is intimately linked to population control. Forced abortion and forced sterilization are two tools used. China's one-child policy is a good example of this.
- China's one-child policy has led to 32 million more boys than girls under age 20, due to infanticide and selective abortion of girl babies, who are deemed of less worth in China's rural areas.<sup>54</sup>

<sup>53</sup> "As teenage pregnancies soar, the Government's answer... abortion ads on television," <http://www.dailymail.co.uk/>

<sup>54</sup> Medical News Today, "China's One-Child Policy Results In 32M More Boys Than Girls Under Age 20, Study Finds," 15 Apr 2009, <http://www.medicalnewstoday.com/articles/146086.php>.

- Three-fourths of married and unmarried couples broke up within one month of the woman having an abortion.<sup>55</sup>
- A perfectly healthy and viable child with one toe still inside his or her mother can still be legally killed.
- The UN Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Discrimination Against Women (CEDAW) sounds good, but in fact it promotes abortion and decriminalization of prostitution. It also discourages Mother's Day celebrations "for encouraging woman's traditional roles," and promotes forced job and political office quotas of 50% women regardless of desire or qualification. President Carter signed this in 1980, but the Congress did not ratify it.<sup>56</sup>
- The UN Convention on the Rights of Child (CRC) also sounds good, but if ratified, children would not need parental consent for abortions; children could choose not to attend church with their parents; children could challenge parental decisions by invoking a review by government bureaucrats; children could not be spanked; children could access pornography despite their parents wishes; parents could not opt their children out of sex education; Christianity could not be taught in either private or public schools, and children could not be homeschooled.<sup>57</sup> This would destroy society in a single generation.
- Teenage girls who watch sex-charged television shows like *That 70s show*, *Sex and the City*, and *Friends* are twice as likely to get pregnant.<sup>58</sup>
- The Hippocratic Oath, taken by doctors before abortion was legalized, states in part, "I will...never do harm to anyone... ***I will not give a woman a [device] to cause an abortion.***"
- In a school speech contest, a twelve-year old girl named Lea asks,
  - *"What if I told you that right now someone was choosing if you were going to live or die? What if I told you that this choice wasn't based on what you could or couldn't do, what you had done in the past, or what you would do in the future? And what if I told you, you could nothing about it? Fellow students and teachers, thousands of children are right now in that very situation. Someone is choosing, without even knowing them, whether they are going to live or die. And that someone is their mother. And that choice is abortion."*

---

<sup>55</sup> Vincent M. Rue, Ph.D. *Forgotten Fathers: Men and Abortion* [Lewiston, New York: Life Cycle Books, 1986]. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 33.

<sup>56</sup> The United States Should Not Ratify CEDAW, [http://www.cwalac.org/article\\_492.shtml](http://www.cwalac.org/article_492.shtml); also Stuart Taylor Jr. and Evan Thomas, "The Long Arm of the Law," *Newsweek*, 4/27/09.

<sup>57</sup> Declaration Alliance letter by Alan Keyes, 2009.

<sup>58</sup> "Teens who watch TV sex shows have higher pregnancy rates," *AFA Journal*, Jan 2009.

- She goes on to say the preborn shouldn't have to pay for the mistakes of the mothers, and gives some examples of the awful aftereffects of abortion on the mother. She ends the speech with a quote from Dr. Seuss's *Horton Hears a Who*, "*a person's a person, no matter how small.*" It is a beautiful speech, and I would encourage all readers to view it.<sup>59</sup>

### What can you do?

- Pray. Even though choice is currently allowed, we must pray that women choose not to avail themselves of that choice. We should educate people of the great dangers and consequences of abortion. Drinking alcohol excessively is legal, but it too is a sin which should be avoided. Adultery is legal, but it is a sin. What is legal in the eyes of society may well be illegal in God's eyes.
- Volunteer. [www.Optionline.org](http://www.Optionline.org) can connect you to a local pregnancy center.
- Donate baby items. Cost is one of the main reasons most babies are aborted.
- Donate to organizations trying to stop abortion. Examples:
  - Human Life International, <http://www.hli.org/>
  - American Life League, <http://www.all.org/>
  - Care Net, <http://www.care-net.org/>
  - National ProLife Alliance, <http://www.prolifealliance.com/>
  - Pregnancy crisis centers in your neighborhood, such as
    - Avenues Pregnancy Clinic in Southern California, <http://www.avenuespregnancyclinic.com/>;
    - [www.Optionline.org](http://www.Optionline.org) can give you others.

### What else does the Bible say?

- The Bible refers to the preborn as children ("ben" or son) and assigns a conscious activity of "struggle" to them:
  - *Gen 25:22, But the children [Jacob and Esau] struggled together within her [Rebekah]...*

---

<sup>59</sup> <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wOR1wUqvJS4>

- The Bible describes the preborn John the Baptist leaping for joy in the womb of his mother upon hearing Mary's voice.
  - *Luke 1:41-44, And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost: And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. (KJV)*
- The Bible teaches we are not to murder, that is, shed innocent blood. What can be more innocent than a preborn baby? Abortion is murder.
  - *Exod 20:13, Thou shalt not kill [murder]. (KJV)*
  - *Prov 6:16-17, These six things doth the LORD hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, (KJV)*
- The Bible teaches judgment will be brought upon nations who make a practice of shedding innocent blood.
  - *Joel 3:19, Egypt shall be a desolation, and Edom shall be a desolate wilderness, for the violence against the children of Judah, because they have shed innocent blood in their land. (KJV)*
- The Bible describes people sacrificing their newborn babies to the god Molech. This was done by heating the arms of a metal statue of Molech until they were red hot. The just-born baby would then be placed in Molech's arms to fry to death. This is not unlike abortion.
  - *Jer 32:35, And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin. (KJV)*
- The Bible says God formed us from the womb.
  - *Isa 44:2, Thus says the LORD who made you and formed you from the womb, who will help you: 'Fear not, O Jacob My servant; and you, Jeshurun, whom I have chosen. (NKJ)*
- The Bible says we should help the weak and poor, like pregnant girls whose babies are being targeted for extermination.
  - *Ps 82:3-4, Defend the cause of the weak and fatherless; maintain the rights of the poor and oppressed. Rescue the weak and needy; deliver them from the hand of the wicked. (NIV)*

- God planned us before we were even conceived
  - *Judg 13:7, But he said unto me, Behold, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son [Samson]; and now drink no wine nor strong drink, neither eat any unclean thing: for the child shall be a Nazarite to God from the womb to the day of his death. (KJV)*
  - *Eph 1:4, According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world [well before birth], that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: (KJV)*
  - *Matt 25:34, Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world [well before birth]: (KJV)*

## 5 Euthanasia

Euthanasia is action either taken or not taken intended to kill a person. In the case of action taken, it is typically a lethal injection. In the case of action not taken, it is typically the withholding of food and water or artificial life support. Physician-assisted suicide is basically still euthanasia, but instead of the doctor “pushing the button” the patient does it himself or herself.

The obscure “right to privacy” supposedly inferred in the constitution led to the legalization of contraception. Contraception led to increased sexual activity. Increased sexual activity combined with inherent contraceptive failure led to increased unwanted pregnancies. Increased unwanted pregnancies and again the “right to privacy” led to the legalization of abortion. Legalization of abortion led to a disregard for the sanctity of life. A disregard for the sanctity of life and again the “right to privacy” led to legalization of euthanasia. Thus, the crafty and devilish industry of modern man has succeeded in extracting a hidden right to kill the preborn, the just-born and the infirm from a document that openly declares the right to life. And not only to kill, but, as in the case of euthanasia, to torture to death by thirst and starvation, means which would be illegal for an animal and even constitutionally forbidden as cruel and unusual for a capitally-condemned criminal. Or, in the case of abortion, to torture to death by crushed limbs, dismemberment, stabs, chemical burns, etc.

*Ps 83:3, They have taken crafty counsel against Your people.... (NKJ)*

*Matt 15:6, ...Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. (KJV)*

*Exod 20:13, "You shall not murder. (NKJ)*

### Some facts:

- Colombia, the Netherlands (Holland) and Belgium have legalized euthanasia; Colombia and the Netherlands have also legalized physician-assisted suicide.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> "History of Euthanasia," <http://www.Euthanasia.com>.

- Hospital administrators in the Netherlands instruct doctors to give involuntary lethal injections to elderly patients if care is too expensive.<sup>2</sup>
- 68% of the elderly in the Netherlands fear being killed without their consent. Nursing homes have shrunk by 80% and many of the residents of those remaining will not drink anything but tap water for fear of being poisoned (doctors are given books on how to put tasteless poisons in food and drink).<sup>3</sup> But it's not only the elderly being euthanized in the Netherlands; infants and teenagers are being killed also. And presumably tourists who have the misfortune to fall ill in that land of death.
- Many Dutch citizens, fearing for their lives should they end up in the hospital, carry "Do not kill me" cards, but these are often ignored by doctors eager to kill.
- About 9% of all deaths in the Netherlands in 1990 were by physician-assisted suicide or euthanasia.<sup>4</sup> This is about ten thousand or so.
  - Of these, about 69% of the patients were euthanized without their consent; 26% were euthanized with consent; and 5% were physician assisted suicides. Thus, over 6% of all deaths were by euthanasia without consent.<sup>5</sup>
- 31% of pediatricians in the Netherlands have killed infants; of these infants killed, a fifth were killed without parental consent.<sup>6</sup>
- 33% of deaths in the Netherlands in 1995 (44,774 total) were caused by lethal injection, increased pain treatment, or non treatment, *each without the patient's consent*.
- At least 200,000 were euthanized in Nazi Germany. Today, about ten thousand are euthanized annually in the Netherlands alone.
- A study finds general practitioners in Great Britain killed about 27,000 patients by giving them a lethal dose of drugs or by withholding

<sup>2</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 135.

<sup>3</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 135, 137.

<sup>4</sup> J. Rummelink et al., "Medical Decisions About the End of Life": Report of the Committee to Study the Medical Practice Concerning Euthanasia, SDU Publishing House, The Hague, 1991; Van der Maas, P.J., van Delden, J.J.M., Pijnenborg, L., "Euthanasia and other medical decisions concerning the end of life." Elsevier, Amsterdam-London-New York-Tokyo 1992, 73 tabl. 7.2, 75 tabl. 7.7, 138 tabl. 13.8, 178-9, 182-3. Cited in Nightingale Alliance, Fast Facts, [www.nightingalealliance.org](http://www.nightingalealliance.org).

<sup>5</sup> Derived from data from: J. Rummelink et al., "Medical Decisions About the End of Life": Report of the Committee to Study the Medical Practice Concerning Euthanasia, SDU Publishing House, The Hague, 1991; cited in "Euthanasia Results in the Netherlands – 1990," euthanasia.com.

<sup>6</sup> Wesley J. Smith, "Now They Want to Euthanize Children," the Center for Bioethics and Culture, thecbc.org.

- treatment. The survey noted that one in seven killed an average of five; that's an average of almost one killing per doctor.<sup>7</sup>
- The state of Oregon in the U.S. has legalized physician-assisted suicide.
  - The U.S. Supreme Court ruled in 1997 that there is no federal constitutional right to assisted suicide.<sup>8</sup>
  - The Hippocratic Oath, once taken by doctors the world over, states in part, *"I will...never do harm to anyone...I will not give a lethal drug to anyone if I am asked, nor will I advise such a plan."*
  - Even though states may not have formally legalized active euthanasia, it is still practiced passively by the withholding of medical treatment or food and water to those who have indicated a desire for such (voluntary) and to those who are incapacitated and have not (involuntary).

### **How many recover from Persistent vegetative state (PVS)?**

There are about ten thousand people living in a persistent vegetative state (comatose) in the U.S.<sup>9</sup> People in a so-called "persistent vegetative state" (PVS) can be candidates for euthanasia, even though about half eventually awake inexplicably from their comatose states, despite their doctors' insistence they had absolutely no chance of recovery. One study of 84 people with PVS had 41% recovering within six months and 58% within three years; another study of 26 children in comas had three-fourths recovering; yet another study of 370 PVS patients had a third recovering.<sup>10</sup> These studies yield an average 40% recovery rate.

- Harold Cybulski was pronounced brain dead and comatose and his life support was about to be removed when his grandson ran into the room and yelled "Grandpa!" He awoke, sat up, and picked up the two-year old! He recovered fully.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>7</sup> Cahal Milmo. "Doctors 'Helped 27,000 Patients to Die'." PA News, Sunday, November 15, 1998. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Euthanasia, CD.

<sup>8</sup> Cited in <http://www.religionfacts.com/euthanasia/stats.htm>.

<sup>9</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, Euthanasia, CD.

<sup>10</sup> Keith Andrews. "Managing the Persistent Vegetative State: Early, Skilled Treatment Offers the Best Hope for Optimal Recovery." British Medical Journal, August 1992, pages 304 and 305; "Results of Head Injury Study Released." Minnesota Physician, January 1989, page 5; Lisa Fitterman. "Neurologist Has Cautionary Tales for Euthanasia Fans." Vancouver Sun [Canada], September 8, 1993, page B3. Cited in Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 116.

<sup>11</sup> "A Little Child Shall Lead Us." Presbyterians Pro-Life NEWS, Summer 1990, page 4. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 116.

- Carrie Coons was diagnosed to be in an "absolutely irreversible vegetative state" after a stroke. Her doctor, a nationally recognized expert, said she had "absolutely no chance of recovery." Coons was then granted a petition to die by the New York Supreme Court. Two days later she awoke and began to speak and eat.<sup>12</sup> Her doctor later admitted there is really no way to determine when or if someone will recover from PVS.
- Terry Schiavo, who suffered extensive brain damage after an apparent heart attack, was diagnosed with PVS. However, videos clearly show her responding to family members, indicating there was a perceiving conscious below her mostly unresponsive body. In response to her husband's wishes, who said she would have wanted it this way, her feeding tube was removed and she slowly died of thirst (dehydration) and starvation over the next thirteen days. Anyone who has been extremely thirsty would know that dying slowly of thirst over a thirteen-day period would be an absolutely agonizing way to die.
- Many others have been killed by thirst and starvation.
- Women in comas have given birth to healthy children, and some have gone on to recover.

### **What happens to the body when a person dies of thirst?**

Dr. David Stevens, CEO of the Christian Medical Association, provided this description:

*As dehydration begins, there is extreme thirst, dry mouth and thick saliva. The patient becomes dizzy, faint and unable to stand or sit; has severe cramping in the arms and legs as the sodium and potassium concentrations in the body go up as fluids go down. In misery, the patient tries to cry but there are no tears. The patient experiences severe abdominal cramps, nausea and dry-heaving as the stomach and intestines dry out.*

*By now the skin and lips are cracking and the tongue is swollen. The nose may bleed as the mucous membranes dry out and break down. The skin loses elasticity, thins and wrinkles. The hands and feet become cold as the remaining fluids in the circulatory system are shunted to the vital*

---

<sup>12</sup> Leslie Bond. "Starvation Order Hastily Rescinded As Carrie Coons Awakens From So-Called "Irreversible" PVS." National Right to Life News, April 27, 1989, pages 5 and 7. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Euthanasia, CD.

*organs in an attempt to stay alive. The person stops urinating and has severe headaches as their brain shrinks from lack of fluids. The patient becomes anxious but then gets progressively more lethargic.*

*Some patients have hallucinations and seizures as their body chemistry becomes even more imbalanced. This proceeds to coma before death occurs. The final event as the blood pressure becomes almost undetectable is a major heart arrhythmia that stops the heart from pumping.<sup>13</sup>*

Violent, writhing seizures and spasms by the dehydrating patient, whose body is thrown into hideous and unnatural contortions, are grotesque and unsettling for hospital staff to behold, and the dying patient is sometimes given medication to suppress these.

### Legal documents<sup>14</sup>

- Living wills. Pro-euthanasia activists refer to Living Wills as the first step toward legalizing euthanasia. These should be avoided. They grant no new rights the patient does not already have, and they could lead to you dying an agonizing death, as would be the case if you had one in Florida and forgot to explicitly state not to withhold food and water, in which case you could be killed by starvation and dehydration if you became incapacitated. If your living will specified you were not to be kept alive by artificial means, and the definition of “artificial means” included food and water, as it does in some states, or was subsequently redefined as such, your living will could also condemn you to be killed by starvation and dehydration. In one case a healthy woman was accidentally given the wrong medicine;<sup>15</sup> she could have easily been treated, but her living will was misinterpreted and she was left to die. Living wills can also shift the priority of your care from that of your health to that of limiting expense.
- Durable power of attorney for health care. Allows someone else to make health care decisions for you in the event you are incapacitated. You would make known your wishes to that person. In the event something happens to you not previously discussed, they would use their best judgment for what is in your best interest, and hopefully this

<sup>13</sup> Dr. David Stevens, CEO of the Christian Medical Association; cited in WorldNetDaily.com, “Dehydration death called ‘cruel, agonizing,’” March 24, 2005.

[http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=43467](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=43467)

<sup>14</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 116-120.

<sup>15</sup> Rita L. Marker, “Euthanasia, Assisted Suicide & Health Care Decisions: Protecting Yourself & Your Family,” <http://www.internationaltaskforce.org>.

person would seek guidance from God through prayer. Preferable to a living will.

- Will to live. Acts as a document generally to preserve your life, including never withholding food and water.

### **Legal history in U.S.**

The following cases built one upon another in establishing euthanasia laws in the U.S.<sup>16</sup> In many ways, the theme seems to be the legalization of killing innocent people inhumanely by slow dehydration and starvation.

- Karen Ann Quinlan (1976). New Jersey Supreme Court. Used the newly discovered “right to privacy” established in the 1965 *Griswold v. Connecticut* Supreme Court decision, which legalized contraceptive use for married persons, to establish another new right of patients to refuse non-extraordinary lifesaving treatment; and, if they are incapacitated, a family member or guardian may act on their behalf in refusing this treatment. In Karen’s case, treatment was refused, but she continued to live in a coma for another nine years before dying.
- Joseph Saikewicz (1977). Massachusetts Supreme Court. Built on Quinlan case. Allowed others to refuse non-extraordinary lifesaving treatment for mentally incompetent people. In this case, Joseph, who was retarded, was refused cancer treatment.
- Joseph Fox (1981). New York Appeals Court. A person’s prior indication of a refusal for extraordinary treatment is legally binding. In Joseph’s case, per his expressed wishes prior to becoming comatose, his respirator was removed and he died.
- Baby Doe of Bloomington (1982). Indiana Supreme Court. Infanticide permitted. This case allowed parents to let their Down’s syndrome child die of thirst and starvation rather than grant permission for him to have a routine operation to correct a birth defect of the esophagus whereby he couldn’t eat. The nonsensical ruling put the parent’s shadowy “right to privacy” above the child’s absolute constitutional right to life. Sadly, the parents refused numerous offers to adopt their baby, choosing instead to let him slowly die of thirst and starvation over a seven day period. This is not only infanticide, but the torturing to death of a helpless infant. Subsequent rulings disallowed the starvation deaths of handicapped children but allowed the withholding of medical treatment to kill handicapped babies. Elsewhere, in

---

<sup>16</sup> Brian Clowes, “The Facts of Life,” Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, pp. 128-132.

- Oklahoma, in 1983, the parents of 24 babies with spina bifida were allowed to let their children slowly die of thirst and starvation.<sup>17</sup>
- Claire Conroy (1985). New Jersey Supreme Court. Allowed withholding care upon patient consent or without consent when burdens of care outweigh its benefits.<sup>18</sup> Allowed the administering of food and water to be considered “extraordinary measures.”<sup>19</sup>
  - Helen Corbett (1986). Florida Appeals Court. Allowed patient or guardian to refuse artificially administered food and water.
  - Paul Brophy (1986). Massachusetts Supreme Court. Court ordered feeding-tube removal and hence death by thirst and starvation.
  - Elizabeth Bouvia (1986). California Appeals Court. Allowed basic care to be withheld and cause death upon consent in non-comatose, non-terminally ill, mentally competent patients. This is nearly a legalization of physician-assisted suicide.
  - Hector Rodas (1987). Colorado District Court. Allowed food and water to be withheld and cause death upon consent in non-comatose, non-terminally ill, mentally competent patients. The court ordered the feeding tube to be removed, and disregarded objections by hospital staff that they would be assisting suicide against their beliefs.
  - Nancy Ellen Jobes (1987). New Jersey Supreme Court. Ordered food and water to be withheld and cause death without consent in non-comatose, non-terminally ill, mentally incompetent patients. This is involuntary euthanasia.
  - Mary O'Connor (1988). New York Appeals Court. Ruled that vague statements such as, "I don't want to be a burden" and "I don't want to lose my dignity before I pass away" were not specific enough to constitute consent to remove feeding tubes.
  - Nancy Cruzan (1988). U.S. Supreme Court. Ruled that states may require "clear and convincing" evidence of an incapacitated patient's prior consent to withhold life supporting treatment in order to do so. However, if prior consent exists, life-supporting care may be withdrawn. In this case Nancy's parents found acquaintances willing to testify in the local Missouri court that Nancy would not want to live like a vegetable. The court ordered her feeding tube removed. She then died slowly of thirst and starvation over a 12 day period.

---

<sup>17</sup> Debra Braun. "Oklahoma Hospital Allegedly Withholds Life-Saving Treatment from Handicapped Babies." *National Right to Life News*, May 16, 1985, page 1. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Euthanasia, CD.

<sup>18</sup> [www.ascensionhealth.org/ethics/public/cases/case10.asp](http://www.ascensionhealth.org/ethics/public/cases/case10.asp).

<sup>19</sup> Leslie Bond. "Cases Test Boundaries of *Conroy* Decision." *National Right to Life News*, November 21, 1985, pages 5 and 9. Cited in Clowes, "The Facts of Life," p. 129.

- Be careful what you tell your friends and family; the words may come back later to condemn you to die a horrible death of thirst and starvation.
- Compassion for Dying, 1996. Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals. In 1991, Washington voters voted against the legalization of physician-assisted suicide for the terminally ill. After losing in the polls, Compassion for Dying then took it to the court. In 1994, the U.S. District Court ruled that there was a constitutional right to assisted suicide. As with abortion, the right rested vaguely in the due process clause (a person cannot be deprived of liberty without due process) from which was inferred a right to privacy. The state of Washington appealed, but in 1996 the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals affirmed the ruling.
- 1997. U.S. Supreme Court. Ruled that there is no federal right to physician assisted suicide; however, neither is there a prohibition against it. Therefore, under the tenth amendment, the states could decide for themselves. The state of Oregon did so in 1994, when people voted to legalize physician assisted suicide.
- Gonzales v. Oregon (2006). U.S. Supreme Court. The federal government tried to end physician assisted suicide in Oregon by arguing that doctors who prescribed overdoses to cause death violated the Controlled Substances Act, but this was unsuccessful.

### **A slippery slope; the tactics of death**

The tactics used to get euthanasia legalized in a country are:

1. Gain acceptance and wide use of Living Wills.
2. Gain acceptance of voluntary euthanasia in its two forms.
  - a. Passive—indirect killing by withholding food/water or medical care.
  - b. Active—direct killing, usually by injection; physician-assisted suicide
3. Gain acceptance of involuntary euthanasia
  - a. Passive (same as above)
  - b. Active (same as above)

*The U.S. has already entered step 3b.*

### **A purpose for suffering**

Euthanasia is driven by:

- Eugenics (a pseudoscience whose purpose is to weed out bad genes);
- Economics (cost reduction of care for the handicapped and infirm);
- Population control (another pseudoscience which falsely argues a lack of living space);
- A demand for organs/spare body parts.

However, even if there is cost reduction or profit, it does not justify murder.

Many infirm, through their sufferings, may come to Christ through their trials. Euthanizing them could be the devil's attempt to kill them prematurely before they've had a chance to come to Christ.

Also, the Lord uses the weak to manifest His strength. The Apostle Paul had a thorn in his flesh:

*2 Cor 12:8-10, Concerning this thing I pleaded with the Lord three times that it might depart from me. And He said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for My strength is made perfect in weakness." Therefore most gladly I will rather boast in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in needs, in persecutions, in distresses, for Christ's sake. For when I am weak, then I am strong. (NKJ)*

Almost all who survive suffering emerge stronger. Suffering has the following potential benefits:

- Strengthens our character;
- Stops us from sinning;
- Allows us to fellowship in Christ's suffering;
- Shows us we are God's children and joint heirs with Christ;
- Allows us to know God better;
- Helps us to obey God;
- Keeps us humble;
- Allows us the opportunity to be a witness for Christ to caretakers;

- Allows the opportunity for Christ to manifest His power through us and be glorified;
- Allows us to subsequently comfort others similarly suffering;
- Allows us to bring others to Christ;
- Draws us to Christ;
- Causes or strengthens our faith;
- Conforms us to the image of Christ.

*Acts 14:22, we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God. (KJV)*

Euthanizing men, women and children also assigns an attribute of worthlessness to them. But the infirm and handicapped are not worthless. They have been created in the image of God, have an eternal soul, and are much loved by God; probably more so than the healthy.

What is the worth of man? The worth of man is what someone is willing to pay for man. God paid the highest price in all of human history for man. He paid with Jesus Christ, His Only Begotten Son, of Infinite Value, Rare, Precious, Unique, Invaluable, and Greatly Beloved. Jesus is God's only Son. God gave what was worth the most to Him, His only Son, to purchase man. And Jesus Himself gave the greatest gift, His Life. That ascribes to all men, healthy and infirm and handicapped, an infinite worth, not something to be discarded as worthless trash.

*John 3:16, For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. (KJV)*

God loves the sick, the handicapped, the weak, the poor, the suffering, the dispossessed, the meek, the abandoned, the defenseless, the vulnerable, the unloved and the despairing. God is with them, helping them, comforting them, and working out a greater plan through them. It is evil for anyone to suggest he or she which is precious in the sight of God is worthless and should die.

*Ps 94:6-9, They slay the widow and the stranger, and murder the fatherless. Yet they say, "The LORD does not see, nor does the God of Jacob understand." Understand,*

*you senseless among the people; and you fools, when will you be wise? He who planted the ear, shall He not hear? He who formed the eye, shall He not see? (NKJ)*

*Heb 10:30-31, ... Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord...It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. (KJV)*

## 6 The ACLU

*Ps 83:3, They have taken crafty counsel against Your people.... (NKJ)*

*Matt 23:27, Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. (KJV)*

The American Civil Liberties Union has been working tirelessly since 1920 to destroy America's Christian heritage.

### The ACLU has sued to:<sup>1</sup>

- Halt the singing of Christmas Carols in public facilities.
- Allow children to view pornography in public libraries on the internet.
- Deny tax-exempt status for Churches.
- Remove all military chaplains.
- Remove all Christian symbols from public property.
- Prohibit Bible reading in classrooms even during free time.
- Remove "In God We Trust" from our coins.
- Remove God from the Pledge of Allegiance.
- Deny federal funding for Boy Scouts until they admit gays and atheists.
- Prevent schools from refusing to put pro-homosexual literature in their libraries.
- Prevent people from putting traditional marriage definition initiatives on the ballot, and reverse elections in which people voted to define marriage traditionally.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Mostly from: Jack Kinsella (Omega Letter Editor). America's Communist Lawyers' Union, 12/2/04, <https://www.omegaletter.com/articles/articles.asp?ArticleID=4195>, as excerpted from the Omega Letter Daily Intelligence Digest, Volume 38: Issue: 26.

<sup>2</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 37.

- Force a conservative Jewish school to allow two lesbians to live in married student housing.<sup>3</sup>
- Stop lunchtime prayers by the Virginia Military Institute and the U.S. Naval Academy.<sup>4</sup>
- Remove the Mojave WWI and Mount Soledad war memorial crosses.
- Prevent the burial of aborted babies.<sup>5</sup>
- Prosecute a high school high school principle and athletic director for saying grace before a luncheon (they faced six month's jail time, fines and loss of pensions).<sup>6</sup>

The ACLU has also sued to remove the cross from the Los Angeles county seal, but it had no problem with Pomona, the Roman goddess of the harvest, being on the seal. Removal of the cross cost taxpayers \$1 million.

The ACLU has defended publically-displayed art degrading Christianity, including:<sup>7</sup>

- A crucifix submerged in a jar of urine.
- A painting of the Virgin Mary with elephant dung smeared on it.
- A painting of a naked, crucified woman on display in the Honolulu City Hall.

#### **The ACLU has also:**

- Successfully fought to strike down an Iowa law which would have prevented sex offenders from living within 2,000 feet of day-care centers and schools.<sup>8</sup>
- Defended the website of the North American Man/Boy Love Association (NAMBLA), which provides guidance on how to seduce

<sup>3</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 126.

<sup>4</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 127.

<sup>5</sup> Brian Clowes, "The Facts of Life," Human Life International, Front Royal, 2001, p. 15.

<sup>6</sup> "Criminal Contempt Case Over a Meal Prayer Goes to Trial on National Constitution Day," Liberty Council, September 16, 2009, <http://www.lc.org/index.cfm?PID=14100&PRID=855>

<sup>7</sup> Liberty Counsel fact sheet, "Some Amazing Facts about America's Enemy Within."

<sup>8</sup> David Pitt, "Judge Strikes Down Iowa Sex-Offender Law," AP, 2/9/04. Cited in Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 78.

and sexually molest boys without getting caught.<sup>9</sup> These website materials incited two men to kidnap, torture, rape and murder a young boy. Free speech that is “directed to inciting or producing imminent lawless action and is likely to incite or produce such action” is not protected. However, despite the fact that the NAMBLA materials incited two men to kidnap, torture, rape and murder a young boy, the ACLU did not agree that the website met this standard and argued it should be protected.

- Encouraged anarchy, when, in 2004, it called upon states to defy laws against same-sex marriage and issue same-sex marriage licenses anyway.<sup>10</sup>
- Promoted a National Day of Appreciation for Abortion Providers, in which abortionists, with the blood of innocents dripping from their hands, were to be thanked as heroes.
- Argued that a Muslim woman could be photographed for her driver’s license wearing a veil.
- Successfully fought to force Catholic Charities to provide contraceptives to its employees, even though Catholics view contraceptive use as sin and this would violate their conscience.
- Called prayer before a high school basketball game “un-American and immoral” and demanded jail time for the same school officials who allowed prayer at an awards banquet.<sup>11</sup>

### **The ACLU is fighting to:**<sup>12</sup>

- Legalize child pornography (including pictures by criminals of actual molestation, sexual abuse, rape, torture and murder of children).
- Legalize polygamy and same-sex marriage.
- Legalize assisted suicide and euthanasia.
- Allow pornographic stores to locate anywhere, including next to churches or day-care centers.

---

<sup>9</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. pp. 74-76.

<sup>10</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 35.

<sup>11</sup> “High School’s Pre-Game Prayer Called ‘Un-American and Immoral,’” WKYC.com, April 6, 2005; cited in Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 145.

<sup>12</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 3, 96, 119, 120.

- Prevent the military from disallowing open displays of homosexuality between soldiers.
- Prevent parents from opting their children out of objectionable public school teachings, such as teaching that homosexuality is normal and acceptable.
- Prevent public schools from recognizing traditional holidays such as Christmas, Easter or Hanukkah.
- Abolish legislative, military and prison chaplaincy programs.

\* \* \*

## Legal history

The ACLU was also involved in or supported the following Supreme Court cases, which built one upon the other in the gutting of Christianity from America:<sup>13</sup>

- 1925. *Scopes v. State* (“Scopes Monkey”). Attempted to remove prohibitions on the teaching of evolution.
- 1947. *Everson v. Board of Education*. This was a critical case in which the idea of “separation of church and state,” which appears nowhere in the Constitution, first became legal precedent. This phrase was originally part of a letter Thomas Jefferson had written to Connecticut Baptists, in which his meaning was not at all that public displays of religion are disallowed but that federal government is disallowed to interfere with religion, in this case Connecticut’s establishment of Congregationalism as the state’s church, which Jefferson was saying was fine and would not be threatened by the first amendment. Public displays of religion were readily allowed throughout U.S. history up until recent times. Jefferson himself attended Christian church services in the House of Representatives building, and opened federal buildings such as the Treasury, the Supreme Court and the War Office to church services.<sup>14</sup> The first amendment states, “Congress shall make no

---

<sup>13</sup> From: Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. pp. 22-26; and Liberty Counsel fact sheet, “Some Amazing Facts about America’s Enemy Within.”

<sup>14</sup> Daniel Dreisbach, *Thomas Jefferson and the Myth of Separation* (New York: New York University Press, 2002, p. 29; and Joseph Lo Conte, “The Wall Jefferson Almost Built;” cited in The Heritage Foundation, December 27, 2001, <http://www.heritage.org/press/commentary/ed122701c.cfm>.

law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof..." Public displays of religion do not violate this "establishment clause;" *they are not equivalent to the Congress of the federal government making a law to establish a religion.* Nevertheless, the ACLU twisted the meaning and suggested the phrase to the court. Justice Hugo Black, a former KKK member and an ACLU member, used the phrase in his opinion, and it's been bandied about as though it were part of the Constitution ever since.

- 1962. *Engel v. Vitale*. No opening-class prayer by teachers in public schools. Hugo Black wrote the decision.
- 1963. *Abington v. Schempp*. No required praying of Lord's Prayer or reading of scripture in public schools, even if students could opt out.
- 1965. *Griswold v. Connecticut*. No prohibiting contraceptives to married persons. Established new "right to privacy." The right to privacy is not found in the Constitution, but Justice Douglas said the right could be inferred from the "penumbras" (shadows) and "emanations" of other constitutional protections. Concurring judges said this newfound "right" was hidden within the due process clause of the Fourteenth Amendment (life, liberty, or property cannot be denied without due process of law).
- 1968. *Epperson v. Arkansas*. No prohibiting teaching of evolution in public schools. Based on right to privacy.
- 1971. *U.S. v. Vuitch*. No ban on abortion if mother's physical or mental health threatened.<sup>15</sup>
- 1972. *Eisenstadt v. Baird*. No prohibiting contraceptives to unmarried persons.
- 1973. *Doe v. Bolton*. No prohibiting abortion if mother's physical or mental health threatened.
- 1973. *Roe v. Wade*. No prohibiting abortion. Based on right to privacy. About 1.2 million unborn American babies have been killed per year since then.
- 1980. *Stone v. Graham*. No posting of Ten Commandments in public schools.
- 1982. *New York v. Ferber*. ACLU tries to get child pornography legalized, but fails.
- 1985. *Wallace v. Jaffree*. No "moments of silence" in public schools.

---

<sup>15</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 133.

- 1987. *Edwards v. Aguillard*. No mandatory teaching of creationism alongside evolution, if evolution is taught in public schools. **Note: this did not mean creationism could not be taught. It can, but its teaching cannot be required to be coupled to that of evolution. Per the opinion, creation science can be taught as one of “a variety of scientific theories about the origins of humankind,” and as a critique on evolution, as long as there is “the clear secular intent of enhancing the effectiveness of science instruction.”**<sup>16</sup>
- 1989. *Allegheny v. ACLU*. No public display of Nativity scene in this case. In this case, the Supreme Court held that this particular nativity scene had a primary effect of advancing religion under the “Lemon test” of *Lemon v. Kurtzman*. The “Lemon test” holds the government to be acting unconstitutionally under the religion Establishment Clause of the First Amendment if its action, a) doesn’t have a secular legislative purpose; b) has the primary effect of either advancing or inhibiting religion; c) results in an "excessive government entanglement" with religion.
- 1992. *Lee v. Weisman*. No graduation prayer at public schools. The problem here was too much school involvement. The Establishment Clause of the First Amendment requires the government to be neutral toward religion, treating it neither favorably nor unfavorably. There cannot be the appearance of state endorsement of prayer at public schools.
  - *The following are guidelines whereby prayer or a blessing at graduation should be acceptable:*<sup>17</sup> 1) *The students, not the school’s staff, decide if they want it;* 2) *A majority of the students must approve and select the student;* 3) *No involvement or review of message by school staff;* 4) *Content must be nonsectarian (not particular to one religious sect) and nonproselytizing (no attempts to recruit followers);* 5) *The school issues a disclaimer in the graduation program stating it was the student’s decision to have the prayer or blessing.*
- 1992. *Planned Parenthood v. Casey*. No regulations that place an undue burden on woman’s right to have an abortion.
- 2003. *Locke v. Davey*. No public scholarships for theological study.
- 2003. *Lawrence v. Texas*. No bans on homosexual sodomy. This legalized the primary mechanism of disease transmission among

<sup>16</sup> See also: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Creation\\_and\\_evolution\\_in\\_public\\_education](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Creation_and_evolution_in_public_education).

<sup>17</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 204-209.

homosexuals, which not only presented severe health risks to those engaging in this practice but also presented extreme economic burdens upon the American people (e.g., the care of AIDS and HIV patients alone consumes about 1% of the Gross Domestic Product (GDP) in the U.S, about \$100 billion per year,<sup>18</sup> and homosexuals account for well over 50% of U.S. AIDS cases, contracting it by sodomy,<sup>19</sup> not to mention the vast numbers of non-AIDS diseases among homosexuals contracted by sodomy (see previous Chapter on Homosexuality)). This would be like the court ruling in favor of the use of used syringes at hospitals, or ruling in favor of surgeons not washing their hands before operations. The court has legalized, and thereby effectively legitimized, a behavior that will sicken and kill millions, and cost hundreds of billions.

### Nativity scenes

The ACLU has sued numerous times to prevent displays of nativity scenes on public property, and many times the local government surrenders without a fight. However, when challenged, the ACLU typically loses this fight. The U.S. Supreme Court has ruled that religious symbols may be displayed on public property if properly displayed. If it is publicly sponsored, it must be in a context of secular symbols (e.g., snowmen); if privately sponsored, a disclaimer must be posted noting its private sponsorship. Christmas carols may also be sung in public schools, as long as they are interspersed with secular songs.<sup>20</sup> Despite the ACLU's fight to purge society of all things Christmas and God, here are some other truths on the subject.<sup>21</sup>

- It's okay for schools to call Christmas, Christmas.
- Schools may not prohibit teachers or students from saying, "Merry Christmas."
- Schools may teach the religious origins of Christmas.
- **The Bible may be read and taught in schools in the context of "history, civilization, ethics, comparative religion, or the like," to quote the Supreme Court.**

---

<sup>18</sup> Oldham, Jennifer. "The Economic Cost of AIDS." Los Angeles Times, October 13, 1995. [Sheldon, p. 63-64.]

<sup>19</sup> Kaifetz, J. "Homosexual Rights Are Concern for Some," Post-Tribune, 18 December 1992.

<sup>20</sup> Mathew D. Staver, Nativity Scenes and Christmas Carols in Public Places, 1999; <http://www.lc.org/resources/nativity.htm>.

<sup>21</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 164-166.

\* \* \*

**ACLU policy documents infer that the ACLU would like to:**<sup>22</sup>

- Have Ten Commandment plaques removed from all public buildings, including the Supreme Court.
- Fire the U.S. House of Representatives and Senate chaplains.
- Remove “In God we trust” from all currency and public documents.
- Remove “Under God” from the Pledge of Allegiance.
- Remove crosses and other religious symbols from military gravestones.
- Remove “Nature’s God,” “Creator,” “Supreme Judge” and “Divine Providence” from the Declaration of Independence when used in public.
- Remove references to God, Providence, the Ten Commandments, etc., from letters and speeches by American’s founding fathers used in public.
- Remove the last stanza of “My Country, ‘Tis of Thee” which goes, “Our fathers’ God, to thee, author of liberty, to thee we sing; long may our land be bright, with freedom’s holy light; protect us by thy might, great God, our King,” when sang in public. Same for the Star Spangled Banner, which lyrics include, “And this be our motto: ‘In God is our trust.’”
- Prevent individuals from their Second Amendment right to bear arms, except police and military.<sup>23</sup>

Alan Sears and Craig Osten, of the Alliance Defense Fund, insightfully stated in their excellent book, *The ACLU vs. America*, “...the ACLU and its allies have twisted the Constitution and its First Amendment—meant to be a shield for people of faith—into a sword against them.”<sup>24</sup>

\* \* \*

---

<sup>22</sup> Michael Novak and John Templeton, “God Bless the ACLU,” *Washington Times*, December 31, 2003; cited in Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “*The ACLU vs America*,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 146-147.

<sup>23</sup> ACLU Policy 47. See <http://www.stoptheaclu.com>.

<sup>24</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “*The ACLU vs America*,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 28.

## Who funds the ACLU?

Who funds the ACLU? Apparently those who agree with what they've been doing and want more of the same. Here are some examples.

- Peter Lewis, chairman of Progressive Insurance, gave \$7 million in 1999 and \$8 million in 2003.
- The Ford Foundation granted \$7 million in 1999 and has historically been a generous and loyal supporter.
- The Rockefeller Foundation has also historically been a generous and loyal supporter.
- The ACLU is also awarded compensation in cases they win through the Civil Rights' Attorney's Fees Awards Act, as explained further below.

The ACLU uses a federal law called the Civil Rights' Attorney's Fees Awards Act to force defendants to pay plaintiff's court costs and fees if the plaintiff wins the case.<sup>25</sup> This often causes small, poor local governments facing potentially catastrophic monetary damages to give up without a fight. It also gives incentive to the ACLU for greedy profiteering.

As an example, the ACLU was awarded \$540,000 in the case against Alabama Chief Justice Roy Moore to remove the Ten Commandments memorial from the court building. So, not only is the ACLU gutting America of her Christian heritage, they are fleecing the American taxpayer in the process. This law, which is fueling the ACLU engine of Christian destruction, was intended for those suffering civil rights abuses. It was never intended to fund First Amendment religious Establishment Clause cases, such as ten commandment or nativity displays. It should not be allowed to be used for that purpose.

## History of ACLU

In 1920, the year the ACLU was founded, a committee of the New York State Legislature described the ACLU as,

---

<sup>25</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 136, 141.

- *“a supporter of all subversive movements; and its propaganda is detrimental to the interests of the state. It attempts not only to protect crime, but to encourage attacks upon our institutions in every form.”*<sup>26</sup>

ACLU’s communist founder, Roger Baldwin, stated,

- *I am for socialism, disarmament, and, ultimately, for abolishing the state itself... I seek the social ownership of property, the abolition of the propertied class, and the sole control of those who produce wealth. Communism is the goal.*

To dispel its growing reputation as a seditious organization, the ACLU began to deceptively act in the guise of a patriotic organization, cloaking itself in a flag, and on rare occasions defending a token conservative cause. But this occasional whitewash could not hope to cover the vast legacy of rotting filth beneath the surface.

Baldwin was friends with Margaret Sanger, founder of Planned Parenthood, and anarchist Emma Goldman, and with numerous other communists. He resisted the draft in WWI, and was jailed for one year. He praised the “social experiment” in Russia where millions were being killed, enslaved and stripped of their basic civil liberties, which he supposedly defended.<sup>27</sup>

In 1981, Jimmy Carter awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the greatest medal possible for civilians, to Roger Baldwin. Carter called him, “a champion of human and civil rights.” That should tell you something about Carter. Either he is a stooge or he is deliberately rewarding the destruction of our Christian heritage.

## **International Law**

In 2003, the Carter Center was the site of the ACLU’s, “Human Rights at Home: International Law in U.S. Courts,” conference, whose agenda it was to use international law to influence U.S. legal decisions.<sup>28</sup> Speakers included Supreme Court Justice Stephen Breyer and Judge Myron Thomson, the judge who ordered Justice Roy Moore to remove the Ten Commandments monument from the court building. Later in 2003, Justice

<sup>26</sup> Daniel Popeo, “Not OUR America...The ACLU Exposed!” Washington Legal Foundation, 10, 1989. Cited in “The ACLU vs America,” Alan Sears and Craig Osten, Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 15.

<sup>27</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 15.

<sup>28</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 174-179.

Ginsberg stated, “[Justices] are becoming more open to comparative and international law perspectives.” Justice O’Connor later stated, “...conclusions reached by other countries and by the international community...should at times constitute a persuasive authority in American courts... I suspect that with time, we will rely increasingly on international and foreign law in resolving ...domestic issues.”

International law was cited:

- By the U.S. Supreme Court to “discover” a hidden constitutional right to engage in sodomy in the 2003 *Lawrence v. Texas* decision, even though it had been illegal for the past 200 years. Justice Kennedy in the majority opinion speaks of “other nations” and “other countries” having accepted sodomy, and then basically says the U.S. should do the same.
- To limit capital punishment in the Supreme Court’s *Atkins v. Virginia* decision, and again in its *Roper v. Simmons* decision.
- By the Massachusetts Supreme Court to legalize same-sex marriage.

The ACLU has been involved in a slow, insidious revolution of America from within. Although from within, it has almost been as effective as if pagan hordes overtook her by force from without.

### **Judicial Activism**

Another strategy the ACLU has used is judicial activism. Judicial activism is the judge’s use of judicial review to judge laws supposedly based on constitutionality to establish or invalidate laws contrary to current policy or the will of the people, thus sidestepping the legislative branch of government, which was intended to establish law.<sup>29</sup>

### **Churches and Tax Exemption**

- Churches do not have to apply for tax exempt status. They are automatically exempt from taxes. The First Amendment states that Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof. The key words here are “No law” and “free exercise.” A church cannot “freely”

---

<sup>29</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 135.

exercise if it is taxed; and there is not “no law” if there is a law to tax a church.

- In 1954, Section 501(c)(3) of the tax code covering tax exempt organizations was amended to include churches. But churches do not have to apply for tax exemption because they are automatically exempt from taxes per the First Amendment. IRS Publication 557 states that “Churches... are exempt automatically if they meet the requirements of section 501(c)(3)” and so need not apply. IRS Section 508(c)(1)(A) lists “churches, their integrated auxiliaries, and conventions or associations of churches” as “mandatory exceptions” to the requirement to apply for 501(c)(3) tax exemption.<sup>30</sup>
- Churches organized under 501(c)(3) may not participate “in the political campaign of a candidate for public office,” but **they may conduct work to influence legislation, such as preaching or having petitions signed to protect marriage, as long as these don’t constitute a “substantial” portion (more than 5-10%) of the church’s resources.**<sup>31</sup> Churches therefore can and should be spending an “insubstantial” (5-10%) amount of their resources to influence legislation, especially on such issues as the sanctity of life, family and traditional marriage.
- Valiant efforts, such as the Houses of Worship Free Speech Restoration Act of 2005, have been made to restore the constitutional right of free speech, removed in 1954, to our nation’s pulpits. Of course organizations such as the ACLU, the Americans United for the Separation of Church and State, and People for the American Way, wishing to keep the church muzzled, are fighting against it.

### Fairness doctrine

The ACLU would also like to muzzle the voices of conservatism by enacting the so-called Fairness Doctrine, in which talk radio would have to be balanced by an opposing viewpoint; thus, on a conservative radio program, if there were 30 minutes of talk about the evils of abortion, the radio station would also have to have 30 minutes of talk from those who favor abortion. This is an inherent violation of the right to free speech.

---

<sup>30</sup> 501c3 Facts, <http://hushmoney.org/501c3-facts.htm>

<sup>31</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, “The ACLU vs America,” Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 198-199.

## The ACLU's hypocrisy and anti-Christian Bias

- The ACLU sues to have memorial crosses taken down, but has no problems with a statue of Quetzalcoatl, an Aztec serpent god, being erected in a public park in San Jose, CA in the 1990s.
- The ACLU sues when Arizona Governor Jane Hull issued a proclamation calling for a "Bible Week," but had no problem when Governor Hull subsequently issued a proclamation to celebrate the birth of Buddha.<sup>32</sup>
- The ACLU sues to prevent Bible reading and prayer in schools, but has no problem with readings from the Koran and Muslim prayers in the classroom.
- The ACLU sues to prevent students from being exposed to the Ten Commandments in classrooms but sues to force little children to be indoctrinated on the inherent goodness of a homosexual lifestyle.
- The ACLU is against tax exemption for churches but fights for them for Wiccans.
- The ACLU is wildly vocal and active against any aspect of Christianity in schools, but is silent as Islam is taught and Muslim prayers are recited.

## Fighting back

The Alliance Defense Fund, American Center for Law and Justice, Pacific Justice Institute, Liberty Council, Liberty Legal Institute and the Rutherford Institute are legal groups committed to protecting our religious freedoms. They do battle against the well-funded attacks on Christianity by the ACLU. Support them with prayer certainly but also with financial donations if you can. And if you are wrongly sued by the ACLU or other similar group, use them; often they will offer their services for free. Don't surrender without a fight. Jesus died for us. Let's fight back for Him.

- Alliance Defense Fund
  - [www.telladf.org](http://www.telladf.org)
  - 1-800-TELL ADF (835-5223)
- American Center for Law and Justice
  - [www.aclj.org/](http://www.aclj.org/)
  - 800-296-4529

---

<sup>32</sup> Jack Kinsella (Omega Letter Editor). America's Communist Lawyers' Union, 12/2/04, <https://www.omegaletter.com/articles/articles.asp?ArticleID=4195>, as excerpted from the Omega Letter Daily Intelligence Digest, Volume 38: Issue: 26.

- Pacific Justice Institute
  - [www.pacificjustice.org](http://www.pacificjustice.org)
  - (916) 857-6900
- Liberty Counsel
  - [www.lc.org](http://www.lc.org)
  - 800-671-1776
- Liberty Legal Institute
  - [www.libertylegal.org](http://www.libertylegal.org)
  - (972) 423-3131
  -
- The Rutherford Institute
  - [www.rutherford.org](http://www.rutherford.org)
  - (434) 978-3888

### **Seniors fight back!**

Alliance Defense Fund indicates it wins nearly 3 of 4 cases in lower courts.<sup>33</sup> In one case, a senior center in Balch Springs, TX was ordered by the city to stop praying over meals, which they had done for years. The courageous seniors fought back, suing the city with the help of ADF attorneys. The city then cut off their bus services and threatened to cut off their meal services.

The U.S. Department of Justice became involved. The city ended up losing the suit and these senior's religious liberties, guaranteed by the U.S. Constitution, were restored.

One of the seniors later ran against the city council members who had mistreated them and won in a landslide! Fight back! Vote those who would take your rights from you out of office, or pray about running against them yourself!

Let's run these haters of Jesus Christ out of office!

\* \* \*

The ACLU wants a sterile public square, devoid of anything God. They want morality condemned and perversion protected. They want innocent

---

<sup>33</sup> Alan Sears and Craig Osten, "The ACLU vs America," Broadman & Holman Publishers, Nashville, 2005. p. 191; 194-196.

babies and invalids murdered but true criminals protected. Who are these people?

Truly, they are the devil's advocates, an organization in league with the devil in opposing God. Do you work for or support the ACLU? Flee from it.

There have been many victories of the righteous against the attacks of the devil. Don't give up without a good fight, even if the odds seem insurmountable.

Sometimes the battle and the onslaught of evil seem overwhelming and relentless. And we say to ourselves, "I'm only one person. What can I do?" But we can certainly all do one thing, and if we each did one thing, we'd collectively do the many things that need to be done. Do one thing. And when you've done that, do another.

*"I am only one, but still I am one. I cannot do everything, but still I can do something; and because I cannot do everything, I will not refuse to do something that I can do." Helen Keller.*

*1 Tim 6:12, Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses. (KJV)*

*Prov 25:26, A righteous man who falters before the wicked is like a murky spring and a polluted well. (NKJ)*

*Mark 12:30, [Jesus said] ...thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength... (KJV)*

*2 Tim 4:7-8, I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing. (KJV)*

## 7 The European Union, the North American Union, and World Government

### Formation of the European Union

Jean Monnet was the architect of the European Union (EU). He knew that citizens of the countries of Europe would never have knowingly allowed their national sovereignties to be surrendered. So he had to proceed slowly, quietly, disguising his moves and intentions, like a chess grandmaster.

His ingenious plan was to first unite the nations economically for reasons of security and prosperity. Countries united economically would be more prosperous and less likely to war, he argued. Once economically united, he knew political union would naturally follow. In fact, before the Europeans knew what hit them, most of the infrastructure for a political union was already in place within the economic machinery. It was then only a small side-step to political union. Few Europeans wanted this. Few believed it could ever happen. And yet it happened. Their national sovereignties were ceded to the EU.

The following were the steps Monnet and other globalists, in particular the Bilderberg Group, used over about a half century to surreptitiously forge the EU.<sup>1</sup>

- 1950. Shuman Declaration. French and German coal and steel production pooled.
- 1951. Treaty of Paris. Belgium, France, Germany, Italy, Luxembourg and the Netherlands (“the six”) form the European Coal and Steel Community (ECSC).
- 1957. Treaty of Rome. “The six” form the European Economic Community (EEC), also called the European Common Market. The European Atomic Energy Commission (EAEC) also established.
- 1957. European Court of Justice (ECJ) established to arbitrate trade disputes.
- 1960. European Free Trade Association (EFTA) formed between Austria, Denmark, Norway, Portugal, Sweden, Switzerland and the UK.
- 1965. The EEC absorbs the ECSC and the EAEC.

---

<sup>1</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), pp. 3-4.

- 1968. European Customs Union established to remove internal border duties and establish common tariffs on imports.
- 1978. European currency unit (ECU) and exchange rate mechanism (ERM) established.
- 1986. Single European Act unifies European market.
- 1992. Treaty of the European Union forms the European Union. Also called the Maastricht Treaty because it was signed in Maastricht, the Netherlands.
- 2002. Euro currency established.

*"We do not want another committee, we have too many already. What we want is a man of sufficient stature to hold the allegiance of all the people and to lift us up out of the economic morass into which we are sinking. Send us such a man, and whether he be God or devil, we will receive him."  
—Paul-Henri Spaak, former prime minister of Belgium, one of the founders of the EU, first president of the United Nations General Assembly, 1957.*

*"...And if we learn from our experience of turning unity of purpose into unity of action, we can together seize this moment of change in our world to create a truly global society."— England Prime Minister Gordon Brown, referring to the financial crisis of 2008.*

*Rev 13:16-17, And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. (KJV)*

### **Could this really happen to the United States?**

These same steps are now being implemented in the United States, Canada and Mexico to form a North American Union and possibly a new North American currency, the Amero. The conspirators deny the end game is to create a North American Union (NAU) and a new currency, just as they did for the EU, but there can be little doubt they are maneuvering their chess pieces for our sovereignty, our constitution, our American protections and freedoms.

It is interesting to note that some think the pace of events is so rapid now that the regionalization step may be bypassed and go straight to world government. But unless there is a crisis of vast proportions it is more likely to occur by regionalization. Other regional unions are also simultaneously forming, for example in African and South America.

Few Americans want to give up American sovereignty, few want a North American Union, and few believe it could ever happen, but its formation is already underway by globalist elites who don't care what the people want. As with the EU, their chess strategy begins with promises of enhanced security and economic prosperity. Here's what's been done so far:

- 1988. Free Trade Agreement (FTA) between the United States and Canada.
- 1994. North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA) adds Mexico.
- 5-6 September 2001. Partnership and Prosperity Initiative, between Mexico (Fox) and the United States (Bush), which had as its apparent goal a study of ways the United States could invest in Mexico's economy which would make Mexico more attractive to workers and consequently reduce illegal Mexican emigration.<sup>2</sup>
- 11 September 2001. Crisis. Attacks on World Trade Center towers and Pentagon.
- 17 October 2001. Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), a notoriously globalist organization of elites funded over the years by the Rockefellers, reveals its involvement when it convenes a meeting entitled, "The Future of North American Integration in the Wake of Terrorist attacks." This introduced the element of security and also "stressed the importance of transportation infrastructure in advancing the integration of North America."<sup>3</sup>
- 2004. CFR creates "an independent task force on the future of North America."<sup>4</sup> Included in the group is Robert Pastor, one of the main planners for a North American Union and a new currency, the Amero. Pastor is to the emerging NAU what Jean Monnet was to the emerging EU.
- March, 2005. CFR issues the report, "Creating a North American Community," (NAC) in which is proposed the creation

---

<sup>2</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 14.

<sup>3</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), pp. 15-16.

<sup>4</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 16.

of a NAC by 2010.<sup>5</sup> The report called for a security perimeter around the three countries collectively but dissolution of the borders between them. This adds insight to why efforts to increase border security between the U.S. and Canada and Mexico are stalled and half-hearted; if they plan to open the borders later, why fortify them now? The report also called for “a North American Investment Fund to stimulate infrastructure development in Mexico.”<sup>6</sup> This is basically a wealth transfer from the U.S. to Mexico, draining the middle class of its wealth and power.

- Igor Panarin, dean of the Russian Foreign Ministry’s diplomat academy, said in 1998 that there is a 45-55% chance the U.S. will be broken up by 2010.<sup>7</sup>
- 23 March 2005. Security and Prosperity Partnership (SPP) is formed between United States, Canada and Mexico. This set in motion working groups in all three countries crafting policy towards a North American integration, and it is going forward at full steam. Nobody voted for this, including Congress. It never came up for a vote. Why? Because it wasn’t crafted as law or treaty or even written agreement, which would have required congressional approval, but was cleverly devised as “Dialogues,” or “Frameworks of Common Principles,” or “Memoranda of Understanding,” or “Declarations of Intent.”<sup>8</sup> As with the EU, however, these unsigned intentions insinuate themselves into real policy and soon become *de facto* law, and then real law.
- May 2005. CFR issues, “Building a North American Community,” in which is stated as their central recommendation, “the establishment by 2010 of a North American economic and security community, the boundaries of which would be defined by a common external tariff and an outer security perimeter.”<sup>9</sup> Robert Pastor “was vice chair of the task force and principle editor of the CFR’s final report.”<sup>10</sup>

They have been working feverishly ever since, in “working groups” and “task forces,” working to “harmonize” regulations between the three countries with a goal of integration.

---

<sup>5</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), pp. 16-17.

<sup>6</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 18.

<sup>7</sup> [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Igor\\_Panarin](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Igor_Panarin)

<sup>8</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), pp. 77-78.

<sup>9</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 22, quoting the CFR task report Forward.

<sup>10</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 27.

### ***Who is Robert Pastor?***

Pastor's resume includes being Director of the Center for North American Studies at American University, in Washington DC. He is a left wing liberal who wants to see America subsumed into a supranational entity, à la the EU. He has been working tirelessly to give away what was purchased by the sweat, blood, tears and lives of our forefathers. Some facts on Pastor:

- Pastor was the executive director of the Rockefeller Foundation's Commission on U.S.-Latin American Relations (aka the Linowitz Commission) which recommended giving the Panama Canal to Panama for free.<sup>11</sup> President Carter, an invention of CFR Chairman David Rockefeller's newly formed Trilateral Commission, was swayed by Pastor, who was by then working in Carter's administration. Carter signed the Torrijos-Carter Treaty in 1978 on the assurance that Panama would keep it neutral. Panama, probably laughing at the stupid Americans, subsequently leased it to the Chinese for 25 years. If it was going to end up in Chinese hands anyway, why didn't the U.S. at least sell it to the Chinese? We probably could have nullified the trillion-dollar-plus trade debt we owe them. The Panama Canal cost the lives of almost 6,000 Americans, not to mention a cost of \$352 million to purchase the land and build the canal between 1904 and 1914.<sup>12</sup> Initial and subsequent costs, including the building of 134 airfields (many used now for drug trafficking) amount to trillions in today's dollars.<sup>13</sup> American blood and taxes. Your children's inheritance. Given away. The senate is also to blame for voting in favor of the treaty. Panama officially took control in 1999; between then to 2004, Asian shipments increased almost four-fold, from 11% to 38%.<sup>14</sup>
- Jimmy Carter, a product and puppet of the Trilateral Commission (TLC), founded in 1973 by David Rockefeller and Zbigniew Brzezinski, surrounded himself with TLC appointments, including Brzezinski, once he was elected president. The TLC's vision of the world is one in which people and governments serve multinational corporations and banks run by globalist elites, a new world order where the world is ruled by globalist elites.

---

<sup>11</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 24.

<sup>12</sup> Wikipedia ([http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Panama\\_Canal](http://www.en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Panama_Canal)); Panama Canal History Museum (<http://www.canalmuseum.com>).

<sup>13</sup> David Lawrence Dewey, <http://www.dldewey.com/panama.htm>.

<sup>14</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 142.

- In Pastor's book, *Toward a North American Community*, Pastor recommended creation of a North American Parliamentary Group and a Permanent North American Court on Trade and Investment.<sup>15</sup> In Europe, the pre-EU court established for arbitration of trade disputes later became the EU political court. Same thing happening here. Economic structure later morphs into political structure.
- Pastor recommends a North American passport.<sup>16</sup>
- Pastor recommends \$400 billion be given to Mexico over 20 years to invest in transportation and infrastructure.<sup>17</sup> Pursuant to this goal, Pastor (or his writings) apparently convinced Senator John Cornyn (R-TX) to sponsor a bill to create the North American Investment Fund. When World Net Daily informed Cornyn that this bill would legislate into existence "a key piece of Robert Pastor's North American Community," Cornyn subsequently withdrew support from the bill while indicating opposition to any kind of American Union.<sup>18</sup>
- Pastor indicated a "new crisis on the magnitude of 9/11 might advance his North American agenda."<sup>19</sup> He stated, "*It's not that I want another 9/11 crisis, but having a crisis would force decisions that otherwise might not get made.*"<sup>20</sup>
- Sounds similar to what David Rockefeller said.
  - "*We are on the verge of a global transformation. All we need is the right major crisis and the nations will accept the New World Order.*"<sup>21</sup>
- Here's another quote from David Rockefeller's book *Memoirs* published in 2002 (page 405):
  - "*Some even believe we are part of a secret cabal working against the best interests of the United States, characterizing my family and me as 'internationalists' and of conspiring with others around the world to build a more integrated global political and economic structure – one world, if you will. If that's the charge, I stand guilty, and I am proud of it.*"

---

<sup>15</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 27.

<sup>16</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 28.

<sup>17</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 29.

<sup>18</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), pp. 36-39.

<sup>19</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 31.

<sup>20</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 32, quoting his article in World Net Daily.

<sup>21</sup> David Rockefeller, speaking at UN, September 1994.

## Secret meetings

The secretive nature of this whole process is very disturbing. It's dark. And it's creepy.

There was a secret meeting in Banff, Alberta Canada in September 2006 involving high-level North American government officials, businessmen and private citizens, such as members of the CFR task force working toward North American integration. Robert Pastor also attended and had a prominent role. Here are some quotes from some concerned observers:

*Meera Karunanathan, Council of Canadians: We question the privacy of a meeting that involves senior ministers of our government meeting with senior government officials of the United States and Mexico. The Canadian public has not been adequately informed about the ongoing North American integration process and we believe it is wrong for a meeting that involves top North American business executives and government officials to be held in secret behind closed doors.<sup>22</sup>*

*Lou Dobbs, news broadcast: The Bush administration is pushing and pushing hard. A partnership between the United States and Mexico and Canada with a goal of what it calls integration by 2010. This partnership among three nations is being discussed at the highest levels of the three governments at the urging of the largest multinational corporations, but it is barreling ahead with absolutely no congressional oversight, no voter approval, out of sight completely of the American people, and as far as we can determine, without any constitutional authority whatsoever...And some mindless and uninformed people are suggesting that this is not even occurring. I saw a number of articles suggesting well this North American Union just isn't happening, it's a fiction, some wild conspiracy theory. Yet it is absolutely documented. This administration continues to deny what is happening right in front of us, although it is happening with stealth and secrecy. It's happening... This is a very important story. Christine*

---

<sup>22</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 56.

*Romans [responding to Dobbs]: They will not come on camera to talk about it.<sup>23</sup>*

*Jerome Corsi: In North America, the merger is happening apart from public scrutiny, driven by multinational corporations who prefer to make their decisions in the boardroom, closed to the watchful eye of the public.<sup>24</sup>*

## **The Logan Act**

“The Logan Act is a United States federal law that forbids unauthorized citizens from negotiating with foreign governments.”<sup>25</sup>

If there are private U.S. citizens, such as members of the CFR, Trilateral Commission or Bilderberg Group, or business leaders, who are working outside the authority of the federal government to secretly negotiate North American integration policy with Canadian and Mexican officials, they are violating the Logan Act and should be charged, prosecuted and imprisoned.

## **Loss of U.S. judicial sovereignty**

Do you realize that even now we have lost judicial sovereignty because NAFTA courts can overrule the U.S. Supreme Court?

“Chapter 11 of the NAFTA agreement allows a private NAFTA foreign investor to sue the U.S. government if the investor believes a state or federal law damages the investor’s NAFTA business...If the decision is adverse to the United States, the NAFTA tribunal can impose its decision as final, trumping U.S. law, even as decided by the U.S. Supreme Court.”<sup>26</sup>

---

<sup>23</sup> CNN, *Lou Dobbs Tonight, A New America?* January 18, 2007; <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6qSGQP-uk0>

<sup>24</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 53.

<sup>25</sup> Wikipedia, Logan Act.

<sup>26</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 69, referencing NAFTA Secretariat, “Overview of the Dispute Settlement Provisions of the North American Free Trade Agreement.

## Transnationalism

Transnationalism is another name now being used for global governance. Don't be fooled. It's the same thing. Same with global "governance" as opposed to global government.

## Guns and the Second Amendment

Proponents of a new world order have been trying for years to weaken the Second Amendment and disarm Americans.

Disarming citizens is one of the steps on the road to tyranny, as was the case in Nazi Germany.

The second amendment gives U.S. citizens the right to bear arms, a right which Canadians and Mexicans do not have. When they "harmonize" the laws of the three countries, do you think they will give Mexicans and Canadians the right to bear arms or disarm Americans?

## High-level SPP government involvement

The Security and Prosperity Partnership (SPP) working groups report to three top cabinet-level officials from each country.<sup>27</sup> For the U.S., in 2005, these were Secretary of State Condoleeza Rice, Secretary of Homeland Security Michael Chertoff and Secretary of Commerce Carlos Gutierrez.

The SPP has cooled down a bit since Obama took office, possibly because of all of the adverse publicity. But in 2008, Obama said,

*"As president, I will restore that [Western Hemisphere] leadership by working to advance the common prosperity and security of all of the people of the Americas. That work must begin with a renewed strategic partnership with Mexico... Our relationship with Mexico should serve as a bridge to greater security and prosperity in North America..."<sup>28</sup>*

<sup>27</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 76.

<sup>28</sup> Dallas News, Op Ed, "Barack Obama: I will repair our relationship with Mexico," February 20, 2008, [http://www.dallasnews.com/sharedcontent/dws/dn/opinion/viewpoints/stories/DN-obama\\_20edi.ART.State.Edition1.464da8e.html](http://www.dallasnews.com/sharedcontent/dws/dn/opinion/viewpoints/stories/DN-obama_20edi.ART.State.Edition1.464da8e.html).

All the buzz words seem to be there for a continued integration effort, though perhaps it will proceed even more stealthily than before.

### Trans-Texas Corridor

While this project appears to be dead, or at least stalled due to loud public protests, it is still instructive to look over what had been planned.

- “...the Bush administration through the Federal Highway Administration (FHWA) has supported plans in the state of Texas to build a huge NAFTA superhighway, four football fields wide, from the Mexican border at Laredo, Texas, to the Canadian border north of Duluth, Minnesota”<sup>29</sup> called the Trans-Texas Corridor. Other corridors were planned throughout Texas. Construction started, but the project was stopped due to public protest. However, it may reemerge under a different name at some point in the future. It had been planned to be operated by a public-private partnership (PPP) between the U.S. government and two corporations: a U.S. company (Zachry Construction) and a foreign one (Cintra, from Spain).
- Eminent domain was to be used to seize private property and homes for this highway for the corporation’s profit, and it was estimated that one million notices to vacate were to be served in Texas alone.<sup>30</sup> U.S. citizens who would have used the Trans-Texas Corridor would also have had to pay a foreign company in part to do so.
  - The outrageous 2005 *Kelo v. City of New London* Supreme Court ruling on eminent domain allows even foreign corporations to seize private U.S. property for their profit. Supreme Court Justices Stevens, Kennedy, Souter, Ginsburg and Breyer voted for this. Perhaps their homes will be seized one day by a foreign corporation seeking profit. We can hope.
  - The 1992 Executive Order No. 12803 signed by President H.W. Bush now allows private investment into U.S. infrastructure<sup>31</sup> (including roads, ports, schools, public buildings); the Supreme Court *Kelo* ruling allows them to seize your property for it.
- Why was the Trans-Texas Corridor (TTC) planned in the first place? Money. It would have allowed corporations shipping goods

---

<sup>29</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 92.

<sup>30</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 98.

<sup>31</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 125.

from the Far East and China, where there is a vast pool of slave labor, to use shipping ports in Mexico, instead of in the U.S. Use of Mexican ports is cheaper because Mexican labor can be used to offload ships and truck goods into the U.S. and expensive U.S. unions such as the Longshoremen and the Teamsters can be avoided. More loss of U.S. jobs and shrinkage of middle class Americans.

- A Chinese company, Hutchison Ports Holdings, is investing heavily to upgrade Mexican ports<sup>32</sup> There would have then been an inland Mexican customs facility located in Kansas City, MO.<sup>33</sup>

### **The effects of “free trade”**

“Free trade” is destroying America, enriching multinational corporations and enslaving millions to lives of suffering, indignity and subsistence. We are becoming a country where the corporation and the state are more important than the individual; this is fascism.

Have you noticed how many factories are closing in America? Have you noticed how many jobs are being lost in America and being outsourced overseas? What is causing this exodus of manufacturing capacity in the United States? Is it just happening, or are there policies in place that are driving it? The answer: there are policies in place that are driving the economic destruction of America. America is one of the last beachheads for freedom in the world. She must be taken out for global government to succeed. Before long she will be stripped bare of her factories and production ability.

Free trade through the North American Free Trade Agreement (NAFTA), the Central America Free Trade Agreement (CAFTA) and the World Trade Organization (WTO) has resulted in millions of jobs lost in America.<sup>34</sup> About three million were lost between 2000 and 2005, and about half of all U.S. manufacturing is done overseas.<sup>35</sup> Since the passage of NAFTA, “despite the transfer of hundreds of thousands of U.S. jobs to Mexico, Mexican labor wages have fallen by nearly 50%.”<sup>36</sup>

---

<sup>32</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 135.

<sup>33</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 100.

<sup>34</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 180.

<sup>35</sup> Lawrence Mishel, “Globalization that works for working Americans,” 01-29-07; cited in Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, p. 180.

[http://www.epi.org/publications/entry/webfeatures\\_viewpoints\\_globalization\\_works\\_4all/](http://www.epi.org/publications/entry/webfeatures_viewpoints_globalization_works_4all/)

<sup>36</sup> *Towards Ideal Monetary Reform Legislation*, <http://www.themoneymasters.com/principles.htm>

Henry Kissinger said of NAFTA:

*"What Congress will have before it is not a conventional trade agreement but the architecture of a new international system ... a first step toward a new world order." –Henry Kissinger, 1993, writing in the Los Angeles Times.<sup>37</sup>*

Winston Lord, former aid to National Security Adviser Henry Kissinger, Assistant Secretary of State under Clinton, former CFR president, Trilateral Commission member, said:

*"To a certain extent, we are going to have to yield some of our sovereignty, which will be controversial at home ... [Under] the North American Free Trade Agreement [NAFTA] ... some Americans are going to be hurt as low-wage jobs are taken away."–Winston Lord, 1992 speech, Los Angeles.<sup>38</sup>*

In addition, inequities derived from a value added tax (VAT), which most foreign countries have but the U.S. does not, result in U.S. imports being subsidized by the exporting country (artificially made cheaper by the exporting government so they sell better here) and U.S. exports being taxed by the importing countries (artificially made more expensive by the importing government so they don't sell as well there). This double-blow puts the U.S. at a tremendous competitive disadvantage. It is estimated that the net effect is decreasing the cost of imports by \$270 billion per year and increasing the cost of our exports by \$180 billion.<sup>39</sup> This drives U.S. trade deficits, which have increased to almost \$1 trillion per year,<sup>40</sup> and have totaled \$9.1 trillion at the end of 2008.<sup>41</sup> This also results in incentive for American corporations to move their manufacturing bases overseas where they will not face this handicap. This is killing U.S. manufacturing and wiping out jobs and the middle class in America. It is estimated that

---

<sup>37</sup> <http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/1990-94.html>

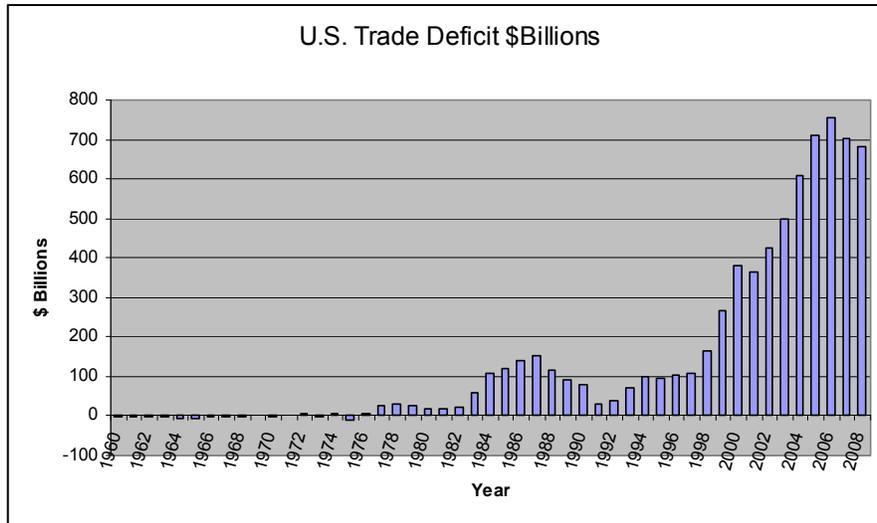
<sup>38</sup> <http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/1990-94.html>

<sup>39</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 166.  
[http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE\\_ID=54076](http://www.worldnetdaily.com/news/article.asp?ARTICLE_ID=54076)

<sup>40</sup> U.S. Census Bureau, Foreign Trade Statistics, <http://www.census.gov/foreign-trade/statistics/historical/gands.txt>

<sup>41</sup> Cumulative U.S. Trade Deficit Soars to \$9.13 Trillion in 2008,  
<http://petemurphy.wordpress.com/2009/02/17/cumulative-us-trade-deficit-soars-to-913-trillion-in-2008/>

as many as an additional 40 million U.S. jobs will be exported offshore within 20 years.<sup>42</sup>



### World government proponents, past and present: Traitors

The Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, the Bilderberg Group, and the Club of Rome are all entities striving for a one-world government. This necessarily means ceding away the sovereignty of the U.S. As such, American members of these groups are inherently traitorous and treasonous. Unfortunately, they have now infiltrated the highest levels of our government and our press.

In 2000, for example, the CFR had 3,819 members of whom 548 (14%) were government officials and 386 (10%) were journalists.<sup>43</sup>

- *"We shall have World Government, whether or not you like it... whether.. by conquest or consent."*
  - *James P. Warburg, Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) member, international*

<sup>42</sup> David Wessel and Bob Davis, "Pain From Free Trade Spurs Second Thoughts," Wall Street Journal, March 28, 2007; cited in Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, p. 190.

[http://online.wsj.com/public/article/SB117500805386350446-cRRynUb3zQgR2Yxn8wFOt96EOIE\\_20070404.html?mod=blogs](http://online.wsj.com/public/article/SB117500805386350446-cRRynUb3zQgR2Yxn8wFOt96EOIE_20070404.html?mod=blogs)

<sup>43</sup> CFR, "Membership,"

[http://docs.google.com/gview?a=v&q=cache:E9i5YhljCQMJ:www.cfr.org/content/about/annual\\_report/ar\\_2000/28-CFRAR.pdf+cfr+2000+report+548+of+3819+members+government+officials&hl=en&gl=us&sig=AFQjCNHwNc7ddZAHPMjweGNkziwUmmQBqg](http://docs.google.com/gview?a=v&q=cache:E9i5YhljCQMJ:www.cfr.org/content/about/annual_report/ar_2000/28-CFRAR.pdf+cfr+2000+report+548+of+3819+members+government+officials&hl=en&gl=us&sig=AFQjCNHwNc7ddZAHPMjweGNkziwUmmQBqg)

*financier, 1950, speaking to the U.S. Senate Committee on Foreign Relations.*

- *"the 'house of world order' will have to be built from the bottom up rather than from the top down... but an end run around national sovereignty, eroding it piece by piece, will accomplish much more than the old-fashioned frontal assault."*
  - *Richard Gardner, CFR and Trilateral Commission member, former U.S. Deputy Assistant Secretary of State, 1974 article in the CFR's Foreign Affairs.*
- *"Sooner or later we are going to have to face restructuring our institutions so that they are not confined merely to the nation-states. Start first on a regional and ultimately you could move to a world basis."*
  - *George Ball, CFR member, former under-secretary of state, NY Times interview, 1988.<sup>44</sup>*
- *"We are grateful to the Washington Post, the New York Times, Time Magazine and other great publications whose directors have attended our meetings and respected their promises of discretion for almost forty years...It would have been impossible for us to develop our plan for the world if we had been subjected to the lights of publicity during those years. But, the world is more sophisticated and prepared to march towards a world government. The supernational sovereignty of an intellectual elite and world bankers is surely preferable to the national autodetermination practiced in past centuries."*
  - *David Rockefeller, CFR chairman, Trilateral Commission founder, Bilderberg Group member, Chase Manhattan bank chairman, June, 1991, Bilderberg meeting, Baden Baden, Germany (meeting was also attended by then-Governor Bill Clinton, Trilateral Commission member).*

---

<sup>44</sup> D.L. Cuddy, Ph.D., A Chronological History of the New World Order, arranged by John Loeffler, [http://www.constitution.org/col/cuddy\\_nwo.htm](http://www.constitution.org/col/cuddy_nwo.htm)

- *"We are on the verge of a global transformation. All we need is the right major crisis and the nation will accept the New World Order."*
  - *David Rockefeller, CFR chairman, Trilateral Commission cofounder, Bilderberg Group member, Chase Manhattan bank chairman, 1994, speaking at the UN.*
  
- *"The precondition for eventual and genuine globalization is progressive regionalization."*
  - *Zbigniew Brzezinski, CFR member, Trilateral Commission cofounder, Bilderberg Group member, former National Security Advisor under Trilateralist Jimmy Carter, at the State of the World Forum, 1995*

Barry Goldwater had this to say about the Trilateral Commission:

*The Trilateralist Commission is international...[and]...is intended to be the vehicle for multinational consolidation of the commercial and banking interests by seizing control of the political government of the United States. The Trilateralist Commission represents a skillful, coordinated effort to seize control and consolidate the four centers of power - political, monetary, intellectual, and ecclesiastical.*<sup>45</sup>

### **One-world government chronology<sup>46</sup>**

- 1771. Illuminati ("enlightened ones") founded.
- 1910. The Carnegie Endowment for International Peace is formed espousing a New World Government.
- 1921. Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) founded.
- 1922. Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) endorses a World Government.
- 1932. "The World Order" by F. S. Marvin describes the League of Nations as the first attempt at a New World Order.

<sup>45</sup> Barry Goldwater, "With No Apologies," 1979.

<sup>46</sup> Jack Van Impe, New World Order Rising, DVD, 2009.

- 1940. “The New World Order” by H. G. Wells proposes a socialist and collectivist one-world state.
- 1940. U.S. Congressional Record publishes article entitled “The New World Order” in which John Alexander calls for a World Federation.
- 1945. U.N. founded.
- 1945. President Truman endorses a World Government.
- 1950. CFR member James P. Warburg states, "We shall have World Government, whether or not you like it... whether.. by conquest or consent."
- 1954. Bilderberg Group founded. Goal was founding a European Union and a one-world government.
- 1959. CFR calls for U.S. to promote New International Order in their Study Number 7.
- 1962. Future U.S. Vice President Nelson Rockefeller says a New World Order is needed.
- 1967. Future president Richard Nixon calls for a New World Order.
- 1967. Former U.S. Attorney General and presidential candidate Robert Kennedy calls for a New World Society.
- 1968. Future U.S. Vice President Nelson Rockefeller pledges support for a New World Order.
- 1968. Club of Rome founded. Goal is globalization through regionalization.
- 1973. Trilateral Commission founded. Goal is uniting America, Western Europe and Japan on way to one-world government.
- 1973. Club of Rome describes a global model based on ten global regions:<sup>47</sup>
  1. **America**, Canada and Mexico
  2. The **E.U.** (Western Europe)
  3. **Japan**
  4. Central and South America
  5. Australia, New Zealand
  6. Eastern Europe
  7. South Asia
  8. Central Asia
  9. North Africa and the Middle East
  10. The rest of Africa

*Note: America, Western Europe and Japan are the three countries the Trilateral Commission has uniting to start a one-world government.*

---

<sup>47</sup> Mihajlo Mesarovic and Eduard Pestel, “Regionalized and Adaptive Model of the Global World System,” Club of Rome report, September 17, 1973.

- 1974. Douglas Roche at the World Congress of Religion for Peace calls for a New World Order.
- 1975. A New World Order is published and promoted by the Center of International Studies at Princeton.
- 1975. In U.S. Congress, 32 Senators and 92 Representatives sign a Declaration of Independence stating: *We must bring forth a New World Order*.
- 1977. President Carter appoints New World Order proponents to key positions.
- 1986. International meeting in South Korea promotes New World Order.
- 1989. President H.W. Bush invites the Soviets to join a World Order in his address to graduates at Texas A&M.
- 1991. President H.W. Bush praises a New World Order in State of the Union speech.
- 1991. Club of Rome states, "In searching for a new enemy to unite us [that is, all of humanity toward a global government], we came up with the idea that pollution, the threat of global warming, water shortages, famine and the like would fit the bill."<sup>48</sup>
- 1993. Henry Kissinger writes in L.A. Times, concerning NAFTA, "What Congress will have before it is not a conventional trade agreement but the architecture of a new international system ... a first step toward a new world order."
- 1996. United Nations produces Global Neighborhood report, which is a plan for Global Government.

### **The Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission, and the Bilderberg Group**

Prominent members of one or more of these groups include: David Rockefeller, Paul Volker, Bill Clinton, Al Gore, Jimmy Carter, Zbigniew Brzezinski and Henry Kissinger, but there are thousands more in key positions of power.

For the past 30 years, presidential cabinets have been dominated by members of the Council on Foreign Relations, the Trilateral Commission and the Bilderberg group, and American sovereignty has consequently

---

<sup>48</sup> Alexander King and Bertrand Schneider, "The First Global Revolution: A Report by the Council of The Club of Rome," 1991. ISBN 0-671-71107-5.  
<http://www.wiseupjournal.com/?p=154>

been eroded away by their subversive policies. Here was the early line-up for Barack Obama's team:<sup>49</sup>

- Treasury Secretary, Timothy Geithner – Bilderberg Group (BG), Trilateral Commission (TC).
- Secretary of State, Hillary Rodham Clinton – BG, Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) married to TC member Bill Clinton.
- Ambassador to the UN, Susan Rice – TC.
- National Security Advisor, Gen. James L. Jones – BG, TC, CFR.
- Deputy National Security Advisor, Thomas Donilon – CFR, TC.
- Special State Department Envoy, Henry Kissinger – BG, TC, CFR.
- Chairman of the Economic Recovery Committee, Paul Volcker – BG, TC, CFR .
- Director of National Security, Adm. Denis C. Blair – BG, TC, CFR.
- Secretary of Defense, Robert Gates – BG, TC, CFR .
- Deputy Secretary of State, James Steinberg – BG, TC, CFR.
- State Department Special Envoy, Richard M. Haass – BG, TC, CFR (President).
- Presidential Advisor, Alan Greenspan – BG, TC, CFR.
- State Department Special Envoy, Richard C. Holbrooke – BG, TC, CFR.

*"His [Obama's] task will be to develop an overall strategy for America in this period when, really, a new world order can be created. It's a great opportunity, it isn't just a crisis... He has appointed an extraordinarily able group of people in both the international and financial fields." –Henry Kissinger, Bilderberg Group, Trilateral Commission, Council on Foreign Relations, January, 2009; CNBC interview with CFR council member and News Anchor Erin Burnett.*

### **Are you a terrorist?**

In April 2009, Obama's administration sent a report to every branch of law enforcement entitled, "Rightwing Extremism: Current Economic and Political Climate Fueling Resurgence in Radicalization and Recruitment."<sup>50</sup>

---

<sup>49</sup> Alex Jones, "The Obama Deception," DVD.

In this report, law enforcement officers throughout the country are warned to watch out for citizens having any of the following beliefs or descriptions as they could be domestic terrorist extremists:

- Oppose illegal immigration
- Oppose same-sex marriage
- Oppose “free trade agreements”
- Oppose gun control
- Oppose the “New World Order”
- Oppose “One World Government”
- Oppose the outsourcing of American jobs
- Oppose the “perceived” threat to U.S. sovereignty by foreign powers
- Oppose abortion
- Oppose “declarations of martial law”
- Oppose “the creation of citizen detention camps”
- Oppose “suspension of the U.S. Constitution”
- Oppose the abridgement (reduction) of State authority.
- Believe in “end times” prophecies
- Those who “stockpile” food, ammunition, or firearms.
- Returning veterans

In other words, if you’re against Obama’s policies, and those of the globalists, you may be a terrorist.

Radio talk show host Michael Savage and the Thomas More Law Center are suing the Department of Homeland Security’s Secretary Janet Napolitano over these civil rights violations which describe the majority of Americans.<sup>51</sup>

But what is really behind this? If normal, law-abiding Christian citizens, who are opposed to the systematic destruction of our government by globalist socialists, can be labeled “terrorists,” and these “terrorists” can then be denied firearms, then the opposition can be disarmed. Welcome H.R. 2159, the “Denying Firearms and Explosives to Dangerous Terrorists Act of 2009,” introduced the same month that the Obama administration released this new definition of “terrorist.” If this bill becomes law, the Attorney General can disarm “terrorists” and need not provide evidence against them. And recall that Hitler disarmed the population; he used a

---

<sup>50</sup> Chuck Baldwin, “We Are All Extremists Now,” <http://www.ronpaul.com/2009-04-17/we-are-all-extremists-now/>

<sup>51</sup> Bob Unruh, “Savage sues Napolitano for targeting vets,” WorldNetDaily, April 17, 2009. <http://www.wnd.com/index.php?fa=PAGE.view&pageId=95244>

national registry of gun owners established prior to this to assist in doing so.

### **Solutions<sup>52</sup>**

- Repeal NAFTA and CAFTA.
- Withdraw from the WTO. Renegotiate fair trade agreements.
- Eliminate trade inequities such as the Value Added Tax.
- Prohibit import of products produced cheaply through slave labor.
- Stop the SPP and efforts to form a North American Union.

And,

- Eliminate the Federal Reserve, which is a private system of mostly European bankers which has been and still is systematically robbing America of her wealth.<sup>53</sup>
- Vote anyone who is a member of the CFR, Trilateral Commission, Bilderberg Group or any other group advocating world government and surrender of U.S. sovereignty out of office.
- Vote in the Constitution Party. There is little difference between the Democratic and Republican parties these days; both are riddled with globalists who are striving for global government, ruining our country and enriching themselves in the process. The Constitution Party promises to return us to the constitution and the biblical/Christian and fiscal values upon which this country was founded.
- Fight against efforts to weaken the Second Amendment's right to bear arms.

### **One-world government in the Bible**

The Bible prophesies that there will be some form of one-world government in the end days. Thus, since prophecy cannot be broken, it is inevitable that countries will coalesce into unions as we approach the end.

---

<sup>52</sup> First set of bullets from Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 193-194.

<sup>53</sup> For additional resources on the Federal Reserve's systematic stripping of America's wealth, watch the Money Masters and related videos ([www.themoneymasters.com](http://www.themoneymasters.com)). Other materials include the books "America's Financial Reckoning Day" by Charles Coppes and "The Creature for Jekyll Island" by G. Edward Griffin.

However, that does not mean we shouldn't resist the enslavement of ourselves and our children by the elites, who view us as the "vulgar masses."<sup>54</sup>

The Bible describes four past world empires, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and Rome. The latter three were prophesied in the Book of Daniel with amazing accuracy and detail before they even came into existence. The Bible goes on to prophesy of a coming world empire that will rise out of the ashes of the fourth fallen Roman Empire, a Revived Roman Empire. This coming world government will come about when ten future kings give their power to a single world leader, the antichrist. In the course of their rise to power, they form a partnership with a mysterious city called Bablyon, symbolized by a harlot, which represents the center of the final apostate religious system. It is ruled by the antichrist's ally, the false prophet, and it is also an economic center, where, as we saw in the first chapter, slavery and other commerce thrives. The kings and the antichrist later turn on this city and destroy it with fire.

The antichrist will make a seven-year peace treaty with Israel, which will start the clock ticking for the seven year tribulation period. The antichrist suffers a fatal wound which he miraculously survives. In the middle of the tribulation, the antichrist is proclaimed to be god by the religious leader, the false prophet. Satan likely possesses the person of the antichrist. These three form a counterfeit trinity, with Satan posing as God the Father, the antichrist posing as Christ the Son, and the false prophet posing as the Holy Spirit. The false prophet causes all to worship the antichrist as god and also causes all to receive the infamous "666" mark of the beast, without which they cannot buy or sell. Just as the Holy Spirit points to Christ, the false prophet points to the antichrist. Just as Jesus Christ is God incarnate, antichrist is Satan incarnate.

Below is found a more detailed verse-by-verse commentary of the end time prophecies found in the parallel passages of Daniel 2, Daniel 7 and Revelation 17.

### **Daniel 2 end times prophecy**

Daniel Chapter 2 describes a disturbing dream by the King of Babylon, Nebuchadnezzar. It is a dream of a terrifying image of a man which represents the future of the world. The king demands that the wise men of Babylon not only interpret the dream, but tell him what the dream was to

---

<sup>54</sup> Charles Coppes, *Petrodollar Warfare and Collapse of U.S. Dollar Imperialism in the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, (IDP Consulting Group, Special Report), p. 12, quoting Leo Strauss from Shadia Drury's *The Political Ideas of Leo Strauss*.

prove their interpretation. Only Daniel, through God, is able to tell and interpret the dream. Daniel relates it to Nebuchadnezzar.

First Daniel tells the king what the dream was. His ability to tell the dream authenticates his interpretation as having come from God.

**Dan 2:31-35, Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible. This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay. Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.**

Daniel sees an image of a man with a head of gold, breast and arms of silver, belly and thighs of brass, legs of iron, and feet partly of iron and partly of clay. A stone then smashes the feet of the image, and the statue is broken into dust which is carried away by the wind. The stone then becomes a mountain which fills the earth. Now Daniel interprets it.

**Dan 2:36-38. This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold.**

Babylon, the existing world empire at that time, is the head of gold.

**Dan 2:39(a). And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee...(KJV)**

The Medes and the Persians conquered Babylon in 530 B.C. They were the breast and two arms of silver. (KJV)

**Dan 2:39(b)... and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. (KJV)**

The Greeks conquered the Medes and the Persians in 330 B.C. They were the belly and thighs of brass.

**Dan 2:40. And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise. (KJV)**

The Romans conquered the Greeks. They were the two legs of iron (east and west).

**Dan 2:41-43. And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay. And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay. (KJV)**

The Roman Empire fell. But it would revive. The feet of iron and clay are thought to represent a Revived Roman Empire formed during the end times. It is thought to be Roman or European because of another prophecy in Daniel, which prophesies the future destruction of Jerusalem by the same people from whom antichrist would descend, which were the Romans.

*Dan 9:26. And after... shall Messiah [Christ] be cut off [killed], but not for himself [He died for us]: and the people [these were Romans] of the prince that shall come [antichrist] shall destroy the city and the sanctuary [Jerusalem and the Jewish temple were destroyed by Romans in 70 A.D.]... (KJV)*

We can see a Roman Empire beginning to revive as the European Union was formed in 1992.

The ten toes represent ten kingdoms that would arise from this final world empire. Some believe these to be the first ten nations of the European

Union while others believe these to be ten world regions or unions of which the EU would be dominant.

**Dan 2:44-45. And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure. (KJV)**

Incidentally, recall the previous verse that stated, “the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.” The stone represents Jesus Christ, and the mountain that forms on earth after the stone smashes the statue is His Kingdom that then fills the earth. But here we learn that the same stone had previously been cut from another mountain without hands before it smashed the statue. What does that first mountain represent? It could represent His heavenly kingdom, or on another level it could also represent God the Father Himself (Jesus was cut out of the Father without hands just as Stone was cut out of the Mountain without hands, God from God, Light from Light, True God from True God, begotten not made, one in being with the Father). The Stone, Jesus Christ, cut from the Mountain that is God, enters human flesh, saves mankind by dying on the cross, rises from the grave, establishes His church, removes His church during the rapture, returns from heaven to defeat His enemies at Armageddon, and establishes an everlasting kingdom on earth. The Stone that came from the Mountain becomes a great mountain/kingdom, akin to the heavenly kingdom, that fills all the earth.

*Luke 11:22, And he [Jesus] said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. **Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.** (KJV)*

### **Daniel 7 end times prophecy**

There is a similar prophecy in Daniel Chapter 7. But this time Daniel has the dream. It is also a troubling dream about the future of the world, but instead of a statue of four metals, Daniel dreams of four beasts.

**Dan 7:1-4(a). In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote the dream, and told the sum of the matters. Daniel spake and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea. And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings...**

The lion with eagle's wings represents Babylon, the head of gold in the previous prophecy. Archeologists excavating ancient Babylon have discovered its emblem to be a lion with wings.

**Dan 7:4(b). ...I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.**

This refers to King Nebuchadnezzar, who was stricken because of his pride with some malady that caused him to behave like an animal. He later turned to the true and living God and was restored to power. This is described in Daniel Chapter 4.

**Dan 7:5. And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.**

This is the Medo-Persian Empire, the chest and arms of silver in the previous prophecy. The three ribs were the empires it had conquered at that time, Babylon, Egypt and Lydia.

**Dan 7:6. After this I beheld, and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.**

This is Greece, the belly and thighs of brass in the previous prophecy, ruled by Alexander the Great. The four heads symbolize the four generals who divided the kingdom after Alexander's death.

**Dan 7:7(a). After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of**

**it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it...**

This is the Roman Empire, the legs of iron in the previous prophecy, which succeeded Greece.

**Dan 7(b). ...and it had ten horns.**

This is the Revived Roman Empire, the ten toes of iron and clay in the previous prophecy, representing the ten kingdoms which would grow out of the old Roman Empire.

**Dan 7:8. I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.**

The little horn is the antichrist. From Revelation 17 we learn that he gains control of all ten kingdoms. In this prophecy, we see how he subdues three of the ten kings at some point.

Some think the ten horns are ten nations within the European Union. But there are now many more than ten. Others think these are ten world regions. It is interesting that the Club of Rome divided the world into ten regions, 1) America, Canada and Mexico (which are in the process of forming a North American Union); 2) The E.U. (Western Europe); 3) Japan; 4) Central and South America; 5) Australia, New Zealand; 6) Eastern Europe; 7) South Asia; 8) Central Asia; 9) North Africa and the Middle East; and 10) The rest of Africa. Could these be the ten regions? The Trilateral Commission envisions a future where America, Western Europe and Japan would first unite on the way to a global system. Could these be the three that are plucked up by the roots by the antichrist as he first seizes the power of these before gaining control of the other regions? Perhaps antichrist rises out of Europe, seizes control of three regions (America, Europe and Japan) and then forms a world confederation when the remaining seven regions then surrender power to him.

**Dan 7:9-14. I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened.**

**I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake: I beheld even till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame. As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time. I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.**

The evil empire is conquered at Jesus Christ's—the Son of Man's—second coming. The Ancient of Days, God the Father, then sits. Jesus Christ renders judgment, and sentence is passed. The horn, antichrist, puts forth great words, but is slain, his body destroyed and given to the flames of hell. The other beasts—the ancient kingdoms of Babylon, Medo-Persia and Greece and the initial Rome—went on after they were succeeded, absorbed into the succeeding kingdoms, but the final beast, the antichrist and the Revived Roman Empire, would not go on. They would be destroyed and replaced by the eternal Kingdom established by Jesus Christ.

**Dan 7:15-18. I Daniel was grieved in my spirit in the midst of my body, and the visions of my head troubled me. I came near unto one of them that stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me, and made me know the interpretation of the things. These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, which shall arise out of the earth. But the saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever.**

The overview of the future of the world from Daniel's perspective is that the present world empire of Babylon would be succeeded by the three future world empires of Medo-Persia, Greece and Rome (initial and then revived). But the end of it all would come when Jesus Christ and the saints of God defeat the enemies of God and take possession and establish an eternal Kingdom wherein Jesus Christ is King.

**Dan 7:19-22. Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron, and his nails of**

**brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows. I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them; Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom.**

Daniel asks about the meaning of the final beast and the ten horns and the little horn. As he looked, the antichrist made war with the believers of Jesus Christ. We learn from Revelation 6:9-11 and 20:4 that those who bear witness for Jesus and refuse the mark of the beast during the tribulation period are beheaded. These will not be members of the "church," however, since Jesus taught that the gates of hell shall not prevail against the church (Matt 16:18), and antichrist *does* prevail against these saints. These saints will be those who have come to faith during the tribulation. The church will have already been raptured (snatched from the earth to meet Jesus in the sky) prior to the tribulation, at which time no believers will exist on earth. Subsequently, during the tribulation, many will come to faith in Jesus Christ, including many Jews.

It appears Jesus allows man to participate in the judgment that follows, of both men and angels, but ultimately all judgment is committed to Jesus:

*1 Cor 6:2-3, Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? ...Know ye not that we shall judge angels?...(KJV)*

*John 5:22, For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: (KJV).*

**Dan 7:23-25. Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And he shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.**

Again, the fourth beast is thought to be the old Roman Empire, out of which will come a Revived Roman Empire of ten nations and ten kings. After this, antichrist will rise, subdue three kings and take control of the ten-nation confederacy.

From Daniel 2 we learned that the confederacy will be divided, or somewhat loosely united, even as iron and clay does not adhere well to each other. It will be partly strong (iron) and partly broken (clay). Perhaps the broken bits represent the subdued three nations. Or perhaps the clay is more like crumbling bits of cement attempting to hold ten bricks together.

The antichrist will rule the confederacy for a time (one year) plus times (two years) and the dividing of time (half year), or 3.5 years. This represents the second half of the seven-year tribulation period which began when the antichrist made a seven-year treaty with Israel. In the midst of this seven-year period, at 3.5 years, the antichrist sets himself up in the Jewish temple, proclaims himself to be God and demands to be worshipped. This shows that the Jewish temple will be rebuilt in Jerusalem. There is no temple today, but the plans have been completed and even many of the temple implements to be used for animal sacrifice already fashioned.

*Dan 9:27, And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week [seven years]: and in the midst of the week [3.5 years] he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate. (KJV)*

*II Th 2:3-4, Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God. (KJV)*

*Matt 24:15-16, [Jesus said] When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: (KJV)*

**Dan 7:26-28. But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end. And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him. Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart. (KJV)**

Antichrist is defeated. Jesus Christ is victorious.

### **Revelation 17 end times prophecy**

Yet another parallel passage is found in Revelation 17. This is a vision by the Apostle John shown to him by an angel, and it reveals even more end times detail.

**Rev 17:1-18. And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters: With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.**

Here the “whore of Babylon” is introduced. She is represented as a woman riding a beast. The woman symbolizes the false religious systems in place throughout history and in the end times, and the beast symbolizes the world’s political systems in place throughout history and in the end times. They are allied with one another, especially in the final days.

**Rev 17:4-6. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with**

**the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.**

The woman is luxuriously appointed, symbolizing her great wealth. However, her golden cup is filled with vile filth and sin.

She is identified as Mystery Babylon. We learn later in verse 18 that the woman represents a great city which reigns over the kings of the earth. But the city is not necessarily literal Babylon, the partially rebuilt ancient city of Babylon which exists in Iraq today. If it were, it wouldn't seem to be much of a mystery, as the name would have been given outright. Besides, we know from Revelation Chapter 18 that the city is near water, and Babylon is landlocked.

Some think it may be Rome (city of seven hills), which is about 15 miles from the Mediterranean. If Rome, it would not be the Catholic Church of today, which believes in the deity of Jesus Christ, but a future, fallen, false religious system which denies Jesus Christ. True Christians will be forced underground at this terrible time. Some believe it might be New York, which is also on the sea.

She is also identified as the Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth. Babel, or Babylon, was founded by Nimrod, a great grandson of Noah. Nimrod instituted an ancient pagan religious system that has existed throughout history, deceiving men with false teachings and persecuting believers of God and of Jesus Christ. She is drunk with the "blood of the saints" (Old Testament believers) and with the "blood of the martyrs of Jesus" (New Testament believers). Thus "Babylon," in addition to being an actual end-time city, is a symbol of the "mother" or origin of all false religious systems since then. These false religions deny the true God and His Son, Who is God in the flesh, Jesus Christ. This will also be a characteristic of the antichrist and his followers.

*I Jn 2:22, Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. (KJV)*

*I Jn 4:2-3, Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. (KJV)*

This Mystery Babylon city is ruled by antichrist's cohort, the "false prophet." The false prophet works with the antichrist, and after the antichrist survives a wound which apparently should have been fatal, the false prophet causes the people to worship the antichrist or be killed. It is also the false prophet who implements the infamous 666 mark of the beast.

*Rev 13:11-18, And I beheld another beast [the false prophet] coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast [antichrist]; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (KJV)*

The false prophet is depicted as having two horns like a lamb. Some believe this might be a hint that he is a fallen Christian. The antichrist is believed to be of Jewish origin, because the Jews apparently initially accept Him as Christ. We know he is Roman or European as well.

*John 5:43, [Jesus said to the Jews] I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. (KJV)*

MSNBC ran a story in 2007 announcing a cashless society using implanted microchips by 2017.<sup>55</sup> There was a secret Bilderberg meeting a year later in 2008 in Chantilly Virginia from which it was leaked that there

<sup>55</sup> <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ybKSwuIHvL8>

was a plan to microchip Americans under the pretext of fighting terrorism.<sup>56</sup>

**Rev 17:7. And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.**

The angel is going to explain the vision.

**Rev 17:8-13. The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.**

The seven heads are seven mountains and seven kings. The mountains are thought to represent kingdoms (remember Dan 2:35, "the stone that smote the image became a great mountain [kingdom], and filled the whole earth. (KJV)).

At the time the Apostle John wrote Revelation, five kings/kingdoms had fallen, one existed at that time, and one was yet to exist. The five fallen kingdoms are thought to be:

1. Egypt
2. Assyria
3. Babylon
4. Medo-Persia
5. Greece

---

<sup>56</sup> Paul Joseph Watson, "Secret Bilderberg Agenda To Microchip Americans Leaked," Prison Planet, June 10, 2008, [http://www.prisonplanet.com/articles/june2008/061008\\_secret\\_agenda.htm](http://www.prisonplanet.com/articles/june2008/061008_secret_agenda.htm)

The one that existed at that time of John's prophecy would then be:

6. Rome

The one yet to exist would be:

7. Revived Rome

Note: Daniel's earlier prophecy was written during the time of the third world empire Babylon. When Daniel wrote his prophecy, the first two kingdoms of Egypt and Assyria had already come and gone. Daniel described the future of the world from that time forward (Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, Rome/Revived Rome).

Concerning "the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven," this is thought to represent the demonic possession of the antichrist, possibly by Satan, who "shall ascend out of the bottomless pit." The seventh king/kingdom would then be antichrist and the Revived Roman Empire prior to the antichrist being possessed by Satan; the "eighth" king/kingdom would be the Revived Roman Empire following the antichrist being possessed by Satan. The time of possession might be the time the antichrist suffers the fatal wound. Also, during the first Roman Empire, it seems likely that Nero was possessed by Satan. Nero rejected Christ, even after the Apostle Paul personally witnessed to him. After this, it is said that he went totally insane, as though he had become demon-possessed. He began to persecute Christians, arresting, torturing and killing them. In his palace garden, he hung Christians on poles, covered them with tar, and lit them on fire to light his garden at night, where naked he raced his chariot through its paths. Nero was dead at the time John wrote Revelation. Thus, "the beast that was" would be Satan possessing Nero prior to that present time; the beast that "is not" describes the contemporary Roman Emperor at the time of John's writing who was not possessed by Satan; and the beast that "yet is" is Satan ascending out of the bottomless pit and again possessing the coming king of the Revived Roman Empire. Thus he was, is not, and yet is, and is among the seven and also the eighth.

Some also view the seven kings as the seven Roman emperors at the time of John's writing, with five falling prior to the current emperor at the time of John's writing, and the seventh being the future world ruler, antichrist. Under this interpretation, the seven mountains are seen to be the seven hills of Rome. However, if the mountains and the kings go together, in that five of both have fallen, this would not make sense since it wouldn't make sense for mountains to fall.

The ten horns, which probably all sprout from the seventh head, are ten future kings who are empowered for a short time. They give their power to the antichrist, the little horn more stout than his fellows which sprouts up among them.

The beast also has this description:

*Rev 13:1-4, And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? (KJV)*

The beast has features of Greece (leopard), Medo-Persia (bear) and Babylon (lion), all of which were basically absorbed by succeeding empires, and is empowered by Satan (dragon). One of its heads is wounded. Since it is thought that the seven heads represent seven kingdoms, and it is also thought that the antichrist himself suffers a fatal wound, it is possible that the kingdom and the king are used interchangeably in this instance. It is also possible that the fatal wound refers to the fall of the first Rome, and its resurrection as Revived Rome.

Interesting EU facts:

- The EU has as its symbol a woman riding a beast. The symbol appears:
  - As a statue outside the EU's office in Brussels;
  - On the centenary stamp of the EU;
  - In a painting in the EU Parliament's Tower Building in Brussels;
  - On EU coins.
- The EU put out a poster depicting the Tower of Babel with the caption, "Many Tongues, One Voice."



Eleven stars, which are downward pointing pentagrams (an occult symbol), appear above the tower, with the top one more prominent than the others (ten horns plus the little horn?).

- The EU's Parliament building, known as The Tower, has 679 seats. Its 666<sup>th</sup> seat is left vacant.
- There is no mention of God or Christianity in the EU constitution. It was deliberately kept out.

**Rev 17:14-18. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth. (KJV)**

The whore is identified as that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth. As mentioned earlier, some think this is Rome, some New York and some the literal city of Babylon, in Iraq, which was rebuilt by Sadaam Hussein. The literal Babylon, however, is landlocked, being about 500 miles from any shipping waters, making it unlikely those on ships could see the smoke of her burning, as is described in Revelation Chapter 18. But the kings of the earth also see the smoke of her burning, so maybe this is being watched on television.

The ten kings give their power to the antichrist, and they then turn on the false religious center in Babylon, represented by the harlot, and destroy her. The descriptions of "eat her flesh" and "burn her with fire," and the fact that she will be rapidly destroyed and no more be inhabited (see also Rev 18, Is 13, 14, and Jer 50, 51), would seem to depict the use of nuclear weapons. Just like a harlot, once antichrist uses her to rise to power, she is discarded.

Antichrist and his then confederacy make war with Jesus Christ, and they are utterly defeated at the Battle of Armageddon when Christ returns with His saints at His Second Coming.

We'll wrap up this chapter with a quick look at the fall of Babylon in Revelation 18:

*Rev 18:1-2, And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory. And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird...*

*Rev 18:9, And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning,...*

*Rev 18:17-24, For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city! And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate. Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her. And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee; And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth. (KJV)*

Subsequent to this destruction of the center of the world's false religious system comes the destruction of the world's political system under antichrist at the Battle of Armageddon when Christ returns.

After this comes the 1,000-year reign of Jesus Christ, during which Satan is bound in hell.

Near the end of the period, Satan is released and allowed to deceive once again.

His rebellion is crushed.

After this there is a new heaven and a new earth where Jesus rules and reigns for eternity.

## 8 Global Warming Scam

The contrived, non-existent crisis of man-made global warming is being used by globalists as a means to unite mankind behind a common cause to create a global tax and global governance.

*“In searching for a new enemy to unite us [that is, all of humanity toward global government], we came up with the idea that pollution, the threat of global warming, water shortages, famine and the like would fit the bill.” The Club of Rome, a globalist group, 1991 report.*

*“The task of saving the earth's environment must and will become the central organizing principle of the post-Cold War world.” Al Gore, former U.S. Vice President; Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) and Trilateral Commission (TC) member; 1992.<sup>1</sup>*

*“[the Kyoto Protocol represents] the first component of an authentic global governance.” Jacques Chirac, former French President; Bilderberg participant; the Hague, November 2000.*

*“Never waste a good crisis ... Don't waste it when it can have a very positive impact on climate change and energy security.” Hillary Clinton, U.S. Secretary of State under Obama; Bilderberg participant and CFR member; speaking of the financial crisis to European Parliament, March 6, 2009.*

*“It is the awareness itself that will drive the change. And one of the ways it will drive the change is through global governance and global agreements.” Al Gore, former U.S. Vice President; CFR and TC member; Oxford, July 7, 2009.*

The global warming alarmists are even teaching that winter might become extinct if we don't act now. On a ski trip to the Colorado resort of Snowmass in 2009, this writer observed the following public notice on the

---

<sup>1</sup> <http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/1990-94.html>

chairlift's restraining bar, warning that snow was an endangered species, despite the fact that they had near-record snowfalls the previous season. The text reads:

*"Snow: An Endangered Species...As a result of human interference in natural ecosystems, the threat of extinction to Snow, and therefore winter, is increasing rapidly. Global Warming Pollution is directly responsible for Snow's shrinking habitat. Without a concerted effort to save Snow, the species is expected to disappear in the year 2100."*

But what does the Bible say?

*Gen 8:22, While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease. (KJV)*

The Bible teaches that the cold and the winter shall not cease.

Don't be fooled by artificial crises contrived by fear-mongering globalists to sway people and governments to cede sovereignty to a global entity. Global warming is one such contrived crisis.

The scientific evidence overwhelmingly points to the sun, not man, as the cause for any warming or cooling on earth.

Consider the facts:

1. The consensus was recently global cooling.<sup>2</sup>
  - a. Time Magazine in 1974 asked, "Another Ice Age?" Time quoted a University of Toronto climatologist as saying, "I don't believe that the world's present population is sustainable if there are more than three years like 1972 in a row [because of global cooling!]." <sup>3</sup> These days, Time has cover headlines of, "Global Warming: Be Worried, Be Very Worried." So, one day according to Time the sky is falling because of global cooling; the next day the sky is falling because of global warming! Apparently gloom and doom sells. But Time is not alone.

<sup>2</sup> Glenn Beck, "Exposed: Climate of Fear," CNN, 5/2/07.

<sup>3</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, p. 15.

- b. Newsweek in 1975 stated that global cooling evidence has “begun to accumulate so massively that meteorologists are hard-pressed to keep up with it.”
  - c. The LA Times in 1978 stated, “No end in site to 30-year cooling trend in Northern Hemisphere!”
  - d. In the mid 1890s, the NY Times spoke of a frozen earth. About 65 years later, in 1959 they said, “A warmer earth evident at poles;” two years later they said, “Scientists agree world is colder.”
2. The biggest greenhouse gas is water, not carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>). CO<sub>2</sub> exists in atmospheric concentrations only 1-2% that of water. Of that small fraction, only 3% is man-made. Thus less than 1/10th of 1% of total greenhouse gases is man-made (less than a thousandth). Are we going to regulate water vapor next?
3. In parallel with the earth’s warming, Mars’ icecaps have been melting and Neptune has warmed up. Are the Martians and Neptunians driving too many SUVs? No. During this time the sun’s solar activity had also increased. This clearly points to solar warming, not man-made warming.
- a. NASA points to warming on Earth, Mars, Neptune’s moon Triton, Jupiter and Pluto. What is common to all of these that could be causing warming? The sun, of course.<sup>4</sup>
  - b. Research at the Max Planck Institute for Solar System Research in Germany determined that the sun has been burning more luminously over the last 60 years. They figured this alone would explain the slight increase in earth’s temperature in this period.
  - c. By the way, the sun’s solar activity has now decreased, beginning in about 2000, and the earth has consequently been cooling. To keep their game in play, global warming/global government proponents are beginning to stop using the phrase “global warming” and start using “climate change.”
4. Antarctic ice cores show global warming precedes increases in CO<sub>2</sub> concentration, not vice versa. Let me repeat that. This is very important. *Antarctic ice cores show warming precedes increases in CO<sub>2</sub> concentration, not vice versa.* That fact alone is fatal to the idea of man-made global warming. What happens is the earth warms first, then the oceans warm; then, like a warm soda losing its fizz, the oceans release dissolved CO<sub>2</sub> gas. The warming comes before the

---

<sup>4</sup> Hal Lindsey Report, TBN, 11-30-08.

increase in CO<sub>2</sub>; the increase in CO<sub>2</sub> does not come first as a cause for the warming, as proponents of manmade warming would have you believe. *Again, the warming comes before the increase in CO<sub>2</sub>.* In the past we've had ice ages. It obviously warmed significantly after these ice ages. What caused the subsequent warming centuries ago? Cavemen in SUVs? No, again natural variations in solar radiation.

5. Global warming proponents say there is a scientific consensus and that the debate is over. What consensus? 17,000 scientists signed a petition by the Oregon Institute of Science and Medicine saying, "there is no convincing scientific evidence that human release of carbon dioxide, methane, or other greenhouse gases is causing or will, in the foreseeable future, cause catastrophic heating of the Earth's atmosphere and disruption of the Earth's climate." If there is a consensus, it's that warming is NOT man-made.
6. More recently, as reported by Newsmax, "over 100 prominent scientists from more than a dozen countries — including a Nobel Prize winner — have signed a letter to President Barack Obama charging that his views on climate change are 'simply incorrect.' The letter — sponsored by the Cato Institute — cites a statement Obama made in November: 'Few challenges facing America and the world are more urgent than combating climate change. The science is beyond dispute and the facts are clear.' Under the headline, 'With all due respect, Mr. President, that is not true,' the scientists state: 'We, the undersigned scientists, maintain that the case for alarm regarding climate change is grossly overstated. Surface temperature changes over the past century have been episodic and modest and there has been no net global warming for over a decade now...The computer models forecasting rapid temperature change abjectly fail to explain recent climate behavior. Mr. President, your characterization of the scientific facts regarding climate change and the degree of certainty informing the scientific debate is simply incorrect.' ...A number of the scientists are current or former reviewers with the United Nations' Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change — which shared the 2007 Nobel Peace Prize with climate change crusader Al Gore — and have since reversed their views on man-made global warming."<sup>5</sup>
7. S. Fred Singer, Professor Emeritus of Environmental Sciences, University of Virginia, stated in June, 2007, "...the widely touted 'consensus' of 2,500 scientists on the United Nations Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC) is an illusion: Most of the panelists have no scientific qualifications, and many of the others object to some part of the IPCC's report. The Associated Press

---

<sup>5</sup> "100-Plus Scientists: Obama 'Simply Incorrect' on Global Warming," Newsmax, April 5, 2009, [http://www.newsmax.com/insider\\_report/Obama\\_Blesses\\_Kissinger/2009/04/05/199963.html](http://www.newsmax.com/insider_report/Obama_Blesses_Kissinger/2009/04/05/199963.html).

reported recently that only 52 climate scientists contributed to the report's 'Summary for Policymakers.' Likewise, only about a dozen members of the governing board voted on the 'consensus statement' on climate change by the American Meteorological Society (AMS). Rank and file AMS scientists never had a say, which is why so many of them are now openly rebelling. Estimates of skepticism within the AMS regarding man-made global warming are well over 50%.”<sup>6</sup>

- a. Singer also pointed out that in any event, scientific consensus is not how science works. There were once consensuses that the earth was flat, that hands didn't have to be washed before surgery and that time was absolute. Science works by evidence, not a by show of hands.
- b. Singer also indicates that data from the Climate Change Science Program Report 1.1, published by the U.S. government in April 2006, indicates that predicted levels of warming rates at various altitudes above the equator do not agree with observed levels. Warming rates should be increasing with altitude; in fact, they are decreasing. One can conclude by this that “man-made greenhouse contribution to current temperature change is insignificant.” Singer further noted, “It is remarkable and puzzling that few have noticed this disparity between observed and predicted patterns of warming and drawn the obvious scientific conclusion” that manmade contributions to warming are negligible.
- c. The computer models may be off because they fail to account for natural feedback mechanisms which counter the effect of increasing CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations and keep temperature change minimal. One such feedback loop is that increased heat causes increased evaporation of the oceans, which causes increased cloud formation, which causes increased reflection of solar energy back into outer space, which cools the earth.
  - i. This is a clever feedback loop design.
    1. *Ps 19:1, The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament shows His handiwork. (NKJ)*
- d. We don't have recorded temperature data beyond a hundred years ago or so, but we do have proxies, or substitute indicators, for past temperatures. One such proxy is oxygen-18, which forms with higher global temperatures; another is carbon-

---

<sup>6</sup> S. Fred Singer, “Global Warming: Man-Made or Natural?” at Hillsdale College, reported in August 2007 issue of Imprimis;  
<http://www.hillsdale.edu/news/imprimis/archive/issue.asp?year=2007&month=08>.

14, which forms with increased cosmic rays/increased solar activity. An article in Nature<sup>7</sup> described a strong correlation between oxygen-18 and carbon-14 in a stalagmite from a cave in Oman over the past 3,000 years; that is, a strong correlation between rising and falling temperature and rising and falling solar activity. Another article appeared in Science the same week with the same information.<sup>8</sup> These articles conclude with near 100% certainty that solar activity is driving climate change.

8. Most warming in this century occurred before 1940. After 1940 there was cooling up to about 1975. Then warming after that. These cycles were absolutely uncorrelated to man-made CO<sub>2</sub> emissions, which rose steadily throughout.
9. Roy Spencer of the University of Alabama indicated that half of warming occurred before 1940 when greenhouse gases were insignificant. If that warming wasn't caused by greenhouse gases, why is it claimed that the warming in the period afterwards was?
10. Of the ten hottest years on record (1906, 1921, 1931, 1934, 1938, 1939, 1953, 1990, 1998, 1999), six were before 1940, when man-made CO<sub>2</sub> emissions were significantly less (80% of manmade CO<sub>2</sub> emissions came after 1940).
11. In August 2007, NASA discovered a temperature data error which led to 1934, not 1998 as previously thought, being the hottest in U.S. history since records began. Why is the hottest year in 1934 and not 2008 when CO<sub>2</sub> emissions were significantly higher? Clearly because the sun, not CO<sub>2</sub>, is the culprit.
12. Greenland has been colder since 1940. Antarctica ice has grown since the 1970s.<sup>9</sup>
13. Global warming alarmists predicted the 2009 summer minimum Arctic Sea Ice Extent (ocean area with 15% or more sea ice) would decline. Instead it increased by an area 1.4 times the size of Texas.<sup>10</sup>
14. Al Gore's famous "hockey stick" shaped graph, which shows temperature versus time over the past thousand years, shows temperature dramatically increasing in the 20<sup>th</sup> century:

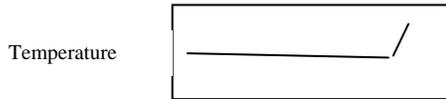
<sup>7</sup> Nature 411, 290-293, 17 May 2001.

<sup>8</sup> Science 292, 1367-1370, 18 May 2001.

<sup>9</sup> Sen. James Inhofe (R-Okla.), floor speech, 10/26/07, [http://epw.senate.gov/public/index.cfm?FuseAction=Minority.PressReleases&ContentRecord\\_id=dc7c65f-802a-23ad-4668-0aec926c60c8](http://epw.senate.gov/public/index.cfm?FuseAction=Minority.PressReleases&ContentRecord_id=dc7c65f-802a-23ad-4668-0aec926c60c8).

<sup>10</sup> Larry Hamlin, "Climate-change winds blow colder," Orange County Register, 10/4/09.

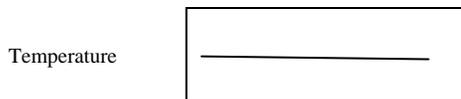
**Gore's graph using only part of the data—deliberate fraud**



Time from 1000 years ago to present, with temperature increasing at the 20<sup>th</sup> century.

However, Steve McIntyre proved the graph to be a hoax. It was deceitfully and knowingly contrived to support a political agenda. For years, independent reviewers tried to get the data from the “scientists” who developed this graph, but they refused. When it finally became available, the fraud was exposed and the truth revealed. The 20<sup>th</sup> century is not the hottest in the past thousand years and the average temperatures are relatively uniform with no “hockey stick” shape at the beginning of the 20<sup>th</sup> century.<sup>11</sup>

**Graph using all the data**



Time from 1000 years ago to present

15. The Kyoto Protocol excludes 129 developing nations, such as China, Brazil, India and South Korea, the 4<sup>th</sup>, 10<sup>th</sup>, 12<sup>th</sup> and 13<sup>th</sup> largest economies in 2006<sup>12</sup>, according to the World Bank. Every 10 days China starts up a new coal-burning electrical generating station big enough to power San Diego; 2,200 of these will be built by 2030<sup>13</sup>. No amount of reduction by the US could possibly outweigh these additions, which are exempt! China surpassed the U.S. in 2006 as the world's leading greenhouse gas emitter.<sup>14</sup>
16. China built 117 coal-fired power plants in 2006; China is now the biggest GHG emitter.<sup>15</sup>
17. Patrick Michaels, PhD, University of Virginia State Climatologist, stated, “The Kyoto Treaty would cost a fortune, between 1 and 3 percent of GDP per year. But the amount of warming that it would save

<sup>11</sup> Larry Hamlin, “Climate-change winds blow colder,” Orange County Register, 10/4/09.

<sup>12</sup> George Will, “*Inconvenient Kyoto Truths*,” Newsweek, 2/12/07.

<sup>13</sup> George Will, “*Inconvenient Kyoto Truths*,” Newsweek, 2/12/07.

<sup>14</sup> International Herald Tribune, 6/20/07,  
<http://www.iht.com/articles/2007/06/20/business/emit.php>.

<sup>15</sup> Sen. James Inhofe (R-Okla.), floor speech, 10/26/07,  
[http://epw.senate.gov/public/index.cfm?FuseAction=Minority.PressReleases&ContentRecord\\_id=dc7c65f-802a-23ad-4668-0aec926c60c8](http://epw.senate.gov/public/index.cfm?FuseAction=Minority.PressReleases&ContentRecord_id=dc7c65f-802a-23ad-4668-0aec926c60c8).

- would be 0.07 degree Celsius in the next 50 years. That was the argument that killed Kyoto in front of the Bush administration, that it costs a fortune, and it does nothing.”<sup>16</sup>
18. The Heritage Foundation estimated a carbon cap and trade system would cost every American family an average of \$3,726 per year, cost the American economy about \$5 trillion, and would result in 500,000 American jobs lost.<sup>17</sup>
19. What would Kyoto achieve if fully implemented? The vast mountains of money and effort and misery would buy 6 years: Says Bjorn Lomborg, “...the temperature we would have reached in 2094, we have now postponed until 2100.”<sup>18</sup>
20. U.S. department of Energy figures on Kyoto’s cost.<sup>19</sup>
- a. Gasoline increases of 14-66 cents/gallon.
  - b. Electricity increases up to 86%.
  - c. Coal prices increased a minimum of 153%.
  - d. Annual cost as much as \$338 billion in 1992 dollars.
  - e. That’s about \$1,000 for every man, woman and child. If you have a wife and three kids, your annual family expenses would be an extra \$5,000 or so per year. Every year. And for what? For nothing.
21. Canada dropped out of Kyoto in 2006, after being advised by 60 prominent scientists that manmade global warming was not backed by real science.<sup>20</sup>
22. Only two European countries are on track to achieve their Kyoto targets to reduce 1990 greenhouse gas emissions by 8% before 2010, Sweden and the UK. The others, which had greater-than-expected economic expansion, will have to pay stiff penalties of as much as \$33 billion. Payment is in the form of purchasing pollution credits. Thus they are penalized for their economic growth. But who will pay?

---

<sup>16</sup> CNN’s Capital Gang interview; 8/19/02; <http://www.cato.org/research/articles/michaels-020819.html>.

<sup>17</sup> Sean Hannity, Heritage Foundation promotion letter, 5/18/09.

<sup>18</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, p. 8.

<sup>19</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, pp. 6,11.

<sup>20</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, p. 7.

- Businesses and taxpayers. The businesses pass on the expenses to the consumer. So who ultimately pays? We do.<sup>21</sup>
23. In 1997, the U.S. Senate had a vote on whether to consider Kyoto or any protocol that would cause serious harm to the economy. The result of the vote? 95-0. All against. Not a single democrat or republican voted to even consider it. It was, and is, a preposterous proposition, paying trillions to achieve nothing. Al Gore signed the protocol anyway in 1998, but Bill Clinton never submitted it to the Senate.<sup>22</sup>
24. The more salty the water the less dissolved CO<sub>2</sub> it can hold. If the oceans were less salty, the oceans would hold so much CO<sub>2</sub> that the plants probably wouldn't have enough to survive. Another design signature from the Creator. The oceans are also becoming increasingly more salty from river run-off, and so over time would be expected to be able to hold less CO<sub>2</sub>, thus increasing atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> by this mechanism as well as by the effects of the solar warming of oceans.
25. As noted earlier, CO<sub>2</sub> is a negligible component of total greenhouse gases. The revered father of climatology, Dr. Reid A. Bryson, stated: "In the first 30 feet of the atmosphere, ...outward radiation from the Earth, which is what CO<sub>2</sub> is supposed to affect, how much [of the reflected energy] is absorbed by water vapor? In the first 30 feet, 80 percent, okay? ...And how much is absorbed by carbon dioxide? Eight hundredths of one percent. One one-thousandth as important as water vapor. You can go outside and spit and have the same effect as doubling carbon dioxide."
- a. Dr. Bryson also stated that the earth has been "coming out of a Little Ice Age for 300 years." He said there have been many global warming periods in the past, which absolutely were not caused by man.
  - b. The Norse farmed in Greenland from the 10th century to the 13th. Today, these old Viking farmsteads are covered by glaciers. What did they find when the ice sheets retreated in the Alps? A silver mine, with the tools left there. The miners expected to return the following season, but snows and ice came and stayed. Thus, the earth has seen warm periods, followed by cold periods, following now by another very slight

---

<sup>21</sup> Noel Sheppard, *Countries Missing Kyoto Targets, Taxpayers to Foot the Bill*, NewsBusters, 11/30/07. <http://www.newsbusters.org/blogs/noel-sheppard/2007/11/30/countries-missing-kyoto-targets-taxpayers-foot-bill>.

<sup>22</sup> "Kyoto's Dead Hand," Wall Street Journal, December 10, 2005, <http://www.opinionjournal.com/weekend/hottopic/?id=110007665>.

warming period (perhaps 1 degree F). These are natural cycles and are all independent of man.

26. The sun goes through roughly 11-year sun spot cycles, from maximum to minimum, but the pattern can be broken. During a period in the Little Ice Age, from 1645-1715, sunspots were so rare that this period became known as the Maunder Minimum. This reduced sunspot activity coincided with the coldest period in this ice age.
  - a. During 2005, when there should have been a minimum, there was actually an extremely high amount of solar activity. This coincided with an extremely high number of hurricanes in that season, Dennis, Emily, Katrina, Rita and Wilma.<sup>23</sup>
  - b. All of this supports a solar cause for climate change, whether warming or cooling.
27. Greenland began melting before 1940, and is actually colder now than in 1920-1940.
28. It's been cooling again lately. Global warming proponents have consequently shifted their strategy, using the phrase "climate change" instead of "global warming." So, they say, whether it gets cold or hot, it's "climate change" caused by man, contrary to the science.
29. After hurricane Katrina, proponents of man-made global warming were in hysterics. Media hype over immanent catastrophes saturated the airwaves. But how many major hurricanes were there in the following year? Zero.
30. R.A. Pielke Jr., in the Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society, wrote, "no connection has been established between greenhouse gas emissions and the observed behavior of hurricanes." Since 1970, there has actually been a steady decrease in the number of hurricanes.
31. A certain number of people die from cold each year. With the slight warming apparently observed from increased solar activity, the reduction in the number of those who die from cold far exceeds the increase in deaths caused by warming. Solar-caused global warming and increased CO<sub>2</sub> levels also increase crop and forest growth rates and generally improve the health of both flora and fauna. Thus the moderate global warming we are currently observing is actually causing plants and crops to thrive and resulting in a net saving of lives.

---

<sup>23</sup> Hal Lindsey Report, TBN, 11-30-08.

32. Temperature data from ground-based stations are almost certainly biased high. Recent investigations<sup>24</sup> show that many of the temperature collecting stations have been compromised and are no longer built to standards. They are positioned near “heat islands,” by hot AC vents, blacktop and cement lots, barbeques, buildings radiating heat, barrels for burning trash, etc. This means that the estimates of the magnitude of global warming are almost certainly biased high. In addition, Temperatures measured using thermometers a century ago were biased low.<sup>25</sup>
33. NewsMax magazine observes: “almost half the claimed warming appeared during two years early in the 20<sup>th</sup> century before greenhouse pollution reached high levels. This temperature jump coincided with a change in how the United States and Great Britain measured temperature on ships around the world and therefore might not be real but due to this change. If measurements a century ago were too low and those today are too high, and if the biggest recorded jump in temperatures during the last century might not really have happened, is global warming happening at all?”<sup>26</sup>
34. Here’s how crazy the hysteria is getting over global warming: U.N. Secretary General Ban Ki-Moon actually blamed the U.S. for the genocide in Sudan, as follows. He states that the genocide was prompted by drought, and the drought was caused by global warming; and, since everyone knows that the U.S. is to blame for global warming, the U.S. is ultimately to blame for the genocide!
35. Here’s another crazy idea. They are actually talking about sequestering CO<sub>2</sub> from emission sources and pumping it into underground caves where it will then be sealed! This would be hugely expensive and do absolutely no good! In fact it could cause harm, as plants breathe CO<sub>2</sub>. Truly insane.
36. More craziness: “Ellen Goodman from the Boston Globe wrote, ‘Let’s just say that global warming deniers are now on par with Holocaust deniers.’”<sup>27</sup>
- a. Rebuttal: If a Holocaust analogy is to be used, it would be that proponents of manmade global warming are promoting a lie just as the Nazis promoted one regarding Jewish inferiority.

---

<sup>24</sup> *Hannity’s America*, 7/15/07, interview of Anthony Watts (more information on [www.surfacestations.org](http://www.surfacestations.org)).

<sup>25</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, p. 12.

<sup>26</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, p. 12.

<sup>27</sup> Glenn Beck, “Exposed: Climate of Fear,” CNN, 5/2/07.

37. Still more: The California wildfires of 2007 were blamed on global warming.<sup>28</sup>
38. Proponents of manmade global warming also argue that “deniers” of manmade global warming are being funded by vast amounts of money from oil companies. The truth is that the funding for proponents of manmade global warming vastly exceeds that of rational scientists who question global warming and are doing the real science debunking the myth. As an example, ExxonMobil has contributed \$23 million to fund global warming research; this compares to \$79 billion from 1989-2008 by the U.S. government, which takes the position that man is causing climate change.<sup>29</sup> That’s over 3,000 times as much! This is also evidence of globalists entrenched in U.S. government funding a deception which has massive taxation and global governance as its solution.
39. Al Gore's Alliance for Climate Change is expected to spend “\$100 million a year advertising global warming alarmism.”<sup>30</sup> Where did he get that kind of money? Wealthy globalists wanting to fuel hysteria and effect a global tax maybe? Gore is also in bed with investment bankers who are poised to become very rich by the new carbon industry. Follow the money.
40. Al Gore is a member of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR) and the Trilateral Commission. As such, he is a proponent of world government.
41. Al Gore in 1992 said, “The task of saving the earth's environment must and will become the central organizing principle of the post-Cold War world.”<sup>31</sup> Organizing what? Global governance.
- a. *“It is the awareness itself that will drive the change. And one of the ways it will drive the change is through global governance and global agreements.” Al Gore, Oxford, July 7, 2009.*
  - b. What is the strategy to form global government?
    - i. Create an artificial crisis.

---

<sup>28</sup> Jim Meyers; “Global Warming Being Blamed for Calif. Wildfires;” Newsmax.com; 10/22/07; [http://www.newsmax.com/headlines/Fires\\_Global\\_Warming/2007/10/22/43539.html?s=al&promo\\_code=3BE7-1](http://www.newsmax.com/headlines/Fires_Global_Warming/2007/10/22/43539.html?s=al&promo_code=3BE7-1).

<sup>29</sup> Joanne Nova, “Climate Money,” <http://joannenova.com.au/2009/07/massive-climate-funding-exposed/>

<sup>30</sup> Noel Sheppard, “Global Warming Ads From Al Gore Coming Soon,” NewsBusters, August 26, 2007; <http://www.newsbusters.org/blogs/noel-sheppard/2007/08/26/global-warming-ads-al-gore-coming-soon>.

<sup>31</sup> <http://www.overlordsofchaos.com/html/1990-94.html>

ii. Create global governance to solve it.

42. Al Gore refuses to debate on global warming, despite being offered his customary multi-hundred-thousand dollar speaking fee.
43. Al Gore incited his disciples to anarchy. On September 24, 2008, Gore said, "If you're a young person looking at the future of this planet and looking at what is being done right now, and not done, I believe we have reached the stage where it is time for civil disobedience to prevent the construction of new coal plants that do not have carbon capture and sequestration." Gore ignored the fact that coal provides 50% of America's electricity, or that new plants are much more efficient and less polluting, or that carbon sequestration will do absolutely nothing at great expense.
- a. For his efforts in building the energy-efficient Cliffside plant, which reduces sulfur dioxide by 80% and nitrogen oxide by 50%, and is also carbon neutral, Duke CEO Jim Rogers had his home vandalized. Meanwhile, the equivalent of 1,000 Cliffsides will be built in China over the next eight years.<sup>32</sup>
44. There is really no energy shortage. The sky is not falling. The U.S. has enough coal to last for hundreds of years, and nuclear energy could be developed to a much greater extent. There is also plenty of oil left, if the government would allow us to drill for it. But even without oil, the coal can be turned into gas and liquid fuel.
- a. There is much energy waste. We should be more conserving of energy. And we should develop alternative energy sources. But we should not do these things by spreading a lie and building the infrastructure for global government.
45. The energy working group for the Security and Prosperity Partnership (SPP) between the U.S., Mexico and Canada stated in their 2005 Report to Leaders "that their goal was 'creating a sustainable energy economy for North America.' To seasoned readers of international documents, the word 'sustainable' used in this context is a code word to globalist thinking embedded in UN doctrine intended to limit the growth of developed nations such as the United States."<sup>33</sup>
46. The Supreme Court of the US, in response to a lawsuit by the state of Massachusetts against the U.S. Environmental Protection Agency for its refusal to regulate CO<sub>2</sub> as a pollutant, ruled that CO<sub>2</sub>, the gas that we exhale and plants breathe, is a pollutant. This sets the stage for an emissions cap and trade program, a carbon tax, rising fuel bills,

---

<sup>32</sup> Wall Street Journal, "Gore's Rebellion," 9-29-08.

<sup>33</sup> Jerome R. Corsi, *The Late Great USA*, (Los Angeles, World Ahead Media, 2007), p. 84.

- increased poverty, the draining of the wealth of the US, and a slide toward global government.
47. The director of state affairs at the Institute for Energy Research, Dan Simmons, says the cap-and-trade program will be “the largest tax increase of all time of all American history and probably all world history.”<sup>34</sup>
  48. The City of Boulder, CO implemented the Climate Action Plan Tax on November 8, 2006, implementing the first government carbon tax for global warming. Unless we expose this lie, this will be coming to all of our cities.
  49. California Assembly Bill 32 requires a statewide cap on greenhouse gas emissions, reduction of these emissions from major stationary sources, and development of a mandatory reporting system for these emissions. Dr. Margo Thorning, Senior Vice President and Chief Economist for the American Council for Capital Formation, authored a report on the bill and cautioned that its passage would cause economic damage to California while doing absolutely no good: “AB 32 is likely to cause ‘leakage’ of industry to states and countries with no mandatory emission caps resulting in job losses and no net reduction in GHGs. Given the quality and quantity of empirical research demonstrating that near-term targets and timetables for CO<sub>2</sub> emissions reductions will negatively impact California without materially slowing the growth of global emissions, policymakers in California should consider carefully whether they want to proceed down this path alone.” The California Chamber of Commerce released the report in Sacramento on June 15, 2006. Governor Schwarzenegger ignored this wise advice and signed the bill into law anyway on September 27, 2006. The bill will result in increased energy costs, industry fleeing to other states/countries, gross state product erosion and widespread job loss. Schwarzenegger ran for governor on a pro-business platform, embracing businessmen as friends. Now he’s stabbing them in the back. The old saying is true, one can plunge the knife in deeper after first embracing.
  50. In a warning against the passing of federal cap and trade laws, CA Rep. Tom McClintock spoke of the now-known effects of a similar law in California, AB32, California’s global warming act, pushed through by Gov. Schwarzenegger in 2007. The effects of this disastrous legislation were whole sectors of the CA economy being shut down, an increase of 2% in unemployment, a doubling of energy costs in areas

---

<sup>34</sup> Pete Chagnon, “Cap-and-trade - 'Largest tax increase of all time',” OneNewsNow, 3/30/2009, <http://www.onenewsnow.com/Politics/Default.aspx?id=468158>

so-far affected (e.g., the city of Truckee, CA), and a state now in bankruptcy.<sup>35</sup>

51. Al Gore's movie, *An Inconvenient Truth*, is filled with errors and deceptions. So much so that a British judge ruled that children watching *Inconvenient Truth* must be made aware of 9 inaccuracies in the movie.<sup>36</sup> The errors/unsubstantiated claims:<sup>37</sup>

- a. Sea level would rise by 20 feet.
- b. Pacific islands being flooded/evacuated.
- c. Ocean Conveyor, which drives the Gulf Stream, being shut down.
- d. Graph showing increased CO<sub>2</sub> levels lead to increased temperatures (as noted earlier, it is known that just the opposite is true, that increased temperature come first, then increased CO<sub>2</sub> levels).
- e. Snow loss on Mt Kilimanjaro caused by manmade global warming.
- f. Drying of Lake Chad caused by manmade global warming.
- g. Hurricane Katrina caused by manmade global warming.
- h. Polar bears disappearing by manmade global warming.
- i. Coral reefs dying by manmade global warming.

52. Many additional errors have also been exposed in Gore's movie "fiction," among them:<sup>38</sup>

- a. 100 ppmv of CO<sub>2</sub> "melting mile-thick ice."
- b. Hurricane Caterina "manmade."
- c. Japanese typhoons "a new record."
- d. Hurricanes "getting stronger."
- e. Big storm insurance losses "increasing."

---

<sup>35</sup> Jon Huey, "The Biggest Economic Mistake Since The Days Of Herbert Hoover," <http://www.tommclintock.com/blog/the-biggest-economic-mistake-since-the-days-of-herbert-hoover>, June 29, 2009.

<sup>36</sup> Newsmax staff, "John Stossel Exposes Global Warming Myths," Newsmax, 10/17/07. [http://www.newsmax.com/insidecover/global\\_warming/2007/10/17/41855.html?s=sp&promo\\_cod e=3BB3-1](http://www.newsmax.com/insidecover/global_warming/2007/10/17/41855.html?s=sp&promo_cod e=3BB3-1).

<sup>37</sup> Noel Sheppard, "Correction: Judge Finds Only Nine Convenient Untruths in Gore's Film," NewsBusters, 10/11/07; <http://newsbusters.org/blogs/noel-sheppard/2007/10/11/correction-judge-finds-only-nine-convenient-untruths-gores-film>.

<sup>38</sup> Christopher Monckton, "35 Inconvenient Truths," Science and Public Policy Institute, 10/18/07; <http://scienceandpublicpolicy.org/monckton/goreerrors.html>.

- f. Mumbai "flooding."
- g. Severe tornadoes "more frequent."
- h. Arctic "warming fastest."
- i. Greenland ice sheet "unstable."
- j. Himalayan glacial melt waters "failing."
- k. Peruvian glaciers "disappearing."
- l. Mountain glaciers worldwide "disappearing."
- m. Sahara desert "drying."
- n. West Antarctic ice sheet "unstable."
- o. Antarctic Peninsula ice shelves "breaking up."
- p. Larsen B Ice Shelf "broke up because of 'global warming.'"
- q. Mosquitoes "climbing to higher altitudes."
- r. Many tropical diseases "spread through 'global warming.'"
- s. West Nile virus in the US "spread through 'global warming.'"
- t. The European heat wave of 2003 "killed 35,000."
- u. Pied flycatchers "cannot feed their young."
- v. The Thames Barrier "closing more frequently."
- w. "No fact...in dispute by anybody."

### 53. Still more Gore Inconvenient Truth untruths

- a. Aral Sea has been drying because of global warming.
  - i. In fact the cause has been the Soviet diversion of rivers which once fed into it.<sup>39</sup>
- b. Snow loss on Mount Kilimanjaro caused by global warming.
  - i. In fact, the cause has been deforestation, which reduces humidity and precipitation; satellite data actually shows the mountain to be colder than in 1970.<sup>40</sup>

54. Is there deliberate bias? Dr. Stephen Schneider, co-director of Stanford's Center for Environmental Sciences and Policy, co-founder of the National Center for Atmospheric Research's Climate Project, editor in chief of the journal *Climatic Change* and a fervent proponent of manmade global warming, stated, "...we need to get some broad-based support, to capture the public's imagination. That, of course,

<sup>39</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, *NewsMax Magazine*, July 2006 reprint, p. 3.

<sup>40</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, *NewsMax Magazine*, July 2006 reprint, p. 3; substantiated by the *International Journal of Climatology* and the *Journal of Geophysical Research*.

entails getting loads of media coverage. So we have to offer up scary scenarios, make simplified, dramatic statements, and make little mention of any doubts we might have..."<sup>41</sup> Leonardo DiCaprio said of his *The 11th Hour*, "I want the public to be very scared by what they see. I want them to see a very bleak future...We need to get kids young."<sup>42</sup>

55. Sometimes the word "anthropogenic" is used in connection with global warming. It's just a fancy word which in this context mean caused by man.

56. Al Gore and the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC) were jointly awarded Nobel Peace Prize in 2007. About this, Hal Lindsey stated<sup>43</sup>: "In recent years, the Nobel Peace Prize has been awarded or shared by such illustrious luminaries for peace as Yasser Arafat, Desmond Tutu, Nelson Mandela, Mikhail Gorbachev, Kofi Annan and Jimmy Carter. In case you aren't keeping track ...that's one unrepentant terrorist, two Marxist socialists, one soviet communist leader, one international thief of historic proportions and of course one useful idiot, in that order."

- a. They are certainly upholding tradition by awarding the Peace Prize to Gore and the IPCC, who advocate policies which would lead to decreased development, increased world poverty, increased tensions, and therefore increased chance for war. Truly amazing!
- b. And the tradition continues with Barack Obama, who was awarded the prize in 2009. Obama is waging aggressive war against the preborn. This is just the opposite of peace.

57. The Nobel was also awarded to Steven Chu, Secretary of Energy under President Obama, for physics. Despite the overwhelming evidence against man-made global warming, Chu stated, "The science is clear and compelling; greenhouse-gas emissions, primarily from fossil fuels, are changing our climate."<sup>44</sup>

- a. What is really clear is that the Nobel is now being used to advance political agendas. That way, when the purchased stooge says, "the earth is flat!" people will think, "he won a Nobel...maybe the earth really is flat!"

---

<sup>41</sup> Lowell Ponte and Marc Morano, NewsMax Magazine, July 2006 reprint, p. 4.

<sup>42</sup> Sen. James Inhofe (R-Okla.), floor speech, 10/26/07, [http://epw.senate.gov/public/index.cfm?FuseAction=Minority.PressReleases&ContentRecord\\_id=dc7c65f-802a-23ad-4668-0aec926c60c8](http://epw.senate.gov/public/index.cfm?FuseAction=Minority.PressReleases&ContentRecord_id=dc7c65f-802a-23ad-4668-0aec926c60c8).

<sup>43</sup> Hal Lindsey, *Hal Lindsey Report*, TBN, 10-19-07.

<sup>44</sup> Steven Chu, "Pulling the Plug on Oil," Newsweek, April 13, 2009.

58. This is all leading to a system of carbon emissions trading, “cap and trade,” whereby CO<sub>2</sub> emissions will be reduced over time. The way it may work is industries will be given a certain number of carbon emission credits per year, allowing them a certain limit or cap on CO<sub>2</sub> emissions. The credits issued per year will then be slowly ramped down. Companies will then be forced to make a decision to either reduce their emissions through such enormously expensive means as carbon sequestration, alternative energy sources, or improved efficiencies of existing processes; or purchase excess credits on the open market from companies who did make these investments and therefore have excess credits for sale. The price of credits will be determined on the open market, and will be based on the expense of the infrastructure investments needed to reduce the emissions, and the expense of the fees charged by the carbon exchanges and traders who are expected to reap vast fortunes. The market would become the largest commodity market in the world, estimated at \$10 trillion per year.<sup>45</sup> This will starve the economic engine of the U.S., which runs on carbon-based fuel, and drain the wealth and power of the U.S., producer of about 20% of man-made CO<sub>2</sub> emissions. The globalists know they must take the U.S. out if they are to have global government. This will further weaken the U.S.’s ability to resist global governance.
59. As stated earlier, the globalist group, The Club of Rome, stated in a 1991 report, “In searching for a new enemy to unite us [that is, all of humanity toward global government], we came up with the idea that pollution, the threat of global warming, water shortages, famine and the like would fit the bill.”<sup>46</sup>
60. Former French President Jacques Chirac said at the Hague in November 2000 that the Kyoto Protocol represents “the first component of an authentic global governance.” Why? Because it will lead to the global governing of world energy use, hence to the global governing of the world economy. For those unwilling to have their economies controlled by this global entity, he proposes a global tax which he hopes will be collected in Europe. He said in Paris on Jan 31, 2007, “A carbon tax is inevitable. If it [the global carbon tax] is European, and I believe it will be European, then it will all the same have a certain influence because it means that all the countries that do not accept the minimum obligations will be obliged to pay.” The tax would apparently take the form of a tariff on exports to Europe from countries who haven’t signed Kyoto. He also demanded that the

---

<sup>45</sup> Joanne Nova, “Climate Money: Bigger Money Moves In”

<http://joannenova.com.au/2009/08/climate-money-bigger-money-moves-in/>

<sup>46</sup> Alexander King and Bertrand Schneider, “The First Global Revolution: A Report by the Council of The Club of Rome,” 1991. ISBN 0-671-71107-5.

<http://www.wiseupjournal.com/?p=154>

United States sign both the Kyoto protocol and its successor agreement that will take effect when the Kyoto accord expires in 2012.

61. Al Gore, speaking about global-warming awareness, and his desire for a governmentally-enforced change to mandate the world's citizens to reduce carbon emissions, said, "It is the awareness itself that will drive the change. And one of the ways it will drive the change is through global governance and global agreements."<sup>47</sup> Does he really believe the science supports manmade global warming or is he just a paid agent of wealthy elitist globalists striving for global government?

It is interesting that the Bible predicts the formation of a one-world government during the last days with a one-world economy centered in Europe; that would require one-world taxation, with taxes flowing to Europe. The idea of manmade global warming is a convenient lie on the road to global government.

\* \* \*

### **The Alinsky connection**

The idea of man-made global warming is a contrived and non-existent crises invented as a means to an end, with that end being global government.

60s radical and communist revolutionary Saul Alinsky taught that crisis and controversy be used to generate change by organizers who should infiltrate the system and work from within. He dedicated his book "Rules for Radicals" to Satan:

*"From all our legends, mythology, and history (and who is to know where mythology leaves off and history begins – or which is which), the first radical known to man who rebelled against the establishment and did it so effectively that he at least won his own kingdom – Lucifer."*

Alinsky stated in page 10 of his book,

---

<sup>47</sup> Al Gore, speaking at the Smith School World Forum on Enterprise and the Environment in Oxford, England; reported by Rick Pedraza, "Gore: Cap-and-Trade Will Bring Global Government," Newsmax, July 13, 2009.  
[http://www.newsmax.com/insidecover/gore\\_global\\_government/2009/07/13/234995.html?s=al&promo\\_code=833F-1](http://www.newsmax.com/insidecover/gore_global_government/2009/07/13/234995.html?s=al&promo_code=833F-1)

*"A Marxist begins with his prime truth that all evils are caused by the exploitation of the proletariat by the capitalists. From this he logically proceeds to the revolution to end capitalism, then into the third stage of reorganization into a new social order of the dictatorship of the proletariat, and finally the last stage—the political paradise of communism."<sup>48</sup>*

Hillary Clinton and Barack Obama were both ardent followers of Alinsky in their early years. Clinton first met Alinsky while in high school; she wrote her senior college thesis on Alinsky's methods. Obama taught the Alinsky method for years, and worked for years as a community organizer in an Alinskite group in Chicago. Obama was also "groomed from his teenage years by a member of the Communist Party USA named Frank Marshall Davis. He was pushed into Harvard Law School by Malcom X's lawyer and by a radical Muslim Black Nationalist named Dr. Khalid al-Mansour."<sup>49</sup>

U.S. Secretary of State Hillary Clinton, demonstrating a Marxist/communist approach to exploiting crisis to foment change, said on March 6, 2009 at the European Parliament, "Never waste a good crisis ... Don't waste it when it can have a very positive impact on climate change and energy security." She would like to see the manufactured global warming and economic crises used to create a climate of fear whereby Americans would accept a carbon tax.

The Bible does prophesize global warming and superstorms for the future, but it, like the science of today, points to a celestial cause.

*Luke 21:25, And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; (KJV)*

*Rev 16:8-9, And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory. (KJV)*

---

<sup>48</sup> "Quotes and excerpts from Rules for Radicals by Saul Alinski -1971," <http://www.crossroad.to/Quotes/communism/alinsky.htm>.

<sup>49</sup> Rev. Louis P. Sheldon, Traditional Values Coalition, letter, 3-20-09.

The Bible also says there will be global government in the end times, so this is inevitable as prophecy cannot be broken. But this doesn't mean we should stand by idly as we and our children are enslaved by globalist elites.

Do not fear. God loves you and is with you. God is with us.

*2 Tim 1:7, For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. (KJV)*

*John 16:33, [Jesus said] These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. (KJV)*

*Matt 28:20, [Jesus said]...lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen. (KJV)*

## 9 The Lie of Evolution<sup>1</sup>

### Hardware and software

Like a computer, living systems are made up of hardware and software. The hardware is mostly protein, which is built from about 20 different types of amino acids. The software is DNA. The DNA is a chain of four different types of molecules called nucleotides, abbreviated A, T, G and C. There are about 6 billion nucleotides in human DNA. Just like the order of letters produces words and sentences, the order of these nucleotides contains the information for all living systems. The order of every three nucleotides codes for a certain amino acid. The amino acids are assembled into protein molecules, and these proteins are used to assemble all living systems.

For DNA to have evolved independent of the apparatus to read it would be like a computer program evolving independent of the computer which uses it. This would be like a computer being assembled by random interactions of atoms in one place, and at the same time a computer program like Excel being independently assembled on a disk by random interactions of atoms in another place, and the two working together just fine! However, these random interactions would also have to have produced a program that contains information on how to make not only itself but the computer too! And vastly more than this, for a computer and a computer program is vastly simpler than a human being. This is clearly an absurd proposition.

### Which came first?

Proteins are needed to make DNA, yet DNA is needed to make the proteins that make the DNA. Which came first, the DNA, which makes the proteins needed to make itself, or the proteins which make the DNA?

The answer is that both had to have been created simultaneously.

---

<sup>1</sup> This chapter is mostly drawn from Dr. Mark Eastman's lectures, entitled: "Mystery of life's origin;" "So you want evidence;" "From the Goo to You;" "Evolution, Creation, Theistic;" "Evidence for God;" "Cosmos;" from the book "The Creator beyond Time and Space," by Mark Eastman and Chuck Missler; additional source citations may be found within these studies (including the works of Christian author and scientist A.E. Wilder-Smith, and Michael Denton's, "Evolution: A Theory in Crisis.")

## **Problems with oxygen; problems without oxygen**

Proponents of evolution theorize that the prehistoric oceans of earth were composed of an organic soup containing the building blocks of matter. However, since oxygen destroys these building blocks, the early atmosphere could not contain oxygen. However, without oxygen there is no ozone; without ozone, there is no filtering of UV light; without filtering of UV light, the UV light would destroy the building blocks. Thus, with oxygen the building blocks are destroyed; but without oxygen they are also destroyed. The evolutionists have not been able to solve this problem.

## **Spark and soup experiments**

Spark and soup experiments attempted to test the theory that the molecular building blocks of life could be created in an early earth atmosphere. A glass container with water, methane, hydrogen, carbon monoxide and ammonia was exposed to a spark source. 85% of what was made was tar, 13% carboxylic acids (mostly not used in living systems), and 2% was a few of the 20 amino acids found in living systems. This was heralded as "proof" of evolution." However, what was not said was,

- The solutions produced by these experiments were highly toxic and would kill any living system.
- Any biomolecules that might have formed would bond with the tar or the carboxylic acid far more readily than with each other, rendering them unavailable for any "evolving life."
- Proteins (combined amino acids) were not produced.
- Nucleotides (the building blocks of DNA) were not produced.
- There is no geochemical evidence that a primordial soup ever existed on planet earth.
- There's no evidence that the early atmosphere had no oxygen. In fact, oxygen is produced by photodissociation, which happens when UV light strike a water molecule in the upper atmosphere to produce oxygen and hydrogen. If there were water and sunlight there was oxygen.
- Even if there were no oxygen, the UV radiation from no ozone would destroy any biomolecules that might have formed.
- If the early atmosphere did have ammonia and methane without oxygen, they would have been destroyed within a few thousand

years by the intense UV radiation. Hydrogen would have dissipated into outer space after a few thousand years.

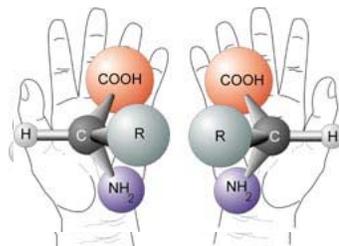
- There are molecules in our body that are so complex that not only do spark and soup experiments fail to produce them, but even the brightest chemists in the world today with the most sophisticated of instruments cannot synthesize them.

Spark and soup experiments are woefully inadequate in explaining the origins of life.

## Chirality

Amino acids, which make up proteins, come in two forms, left-handed and right-handed. These have exactly the same atoms and structure, but are three-dimensional mirror images of each other, just like your left and right hand. In nature, or in spark and soup experiments, left and right handed amino acids are formed in equal quantities, and any proteins that did happen to form would consist of equal portions of left and right handed amino acids. However, all proteins in living systems are made up of only left-handed amino acids. This is virtually impossible to explain through chance chemistry. It would be like having a bag of equal amounts of left- and right-handed gloves, which were to be stitched together to produce a string of gloves, and constantly picking only the left handed ones; if a single right-handed one is picked and used in the assembly, the structure would be destroyed because its three-dimensional shape, which is critical to its function, would be altered.

The same issue exists for DNA; which consists exclusively of right-handed nucleotides. A single left-handed nucleotide in the structure would destroy its helical shape and its ability to function properly. Nucleotides, the building blocks of DNA, have never been formed in spark and soup experiments, but if they could be spontaneously formed through random chemistry, they would be formed in equal amounts of left- and right-handed forms. Can you imagine a DNA chain of 6 billion right-handed nucleotides forming from an equal mix of right and left handed nucleotides? It is virtually impossible to have happened by chance and could only have happened with the biochemical expertise of a Creator. This is an absolutely fatal problem for evolutionists.



Left- and right-handed amino acids. (Image from Wikipedia, Chirality).

### **Law of Mass Action and equilibrium—time won't help**

Amino acids combine to form proteins. When two amino acids combine, they form a dipeptide protein molecule plus a water molecule. The reaction can also go in the reverse direction.



There is a principle in chemistry, called the Law of Mass Action, whereby a chemical reaction will go in a direction from high concentration to low concentration.

The oceans obviously have a very high concentration of water. Thus, per this law, the above reaction would be driven not toward the combining of amino acids, which produces more water, but toward the destruction of any proteins that might have formed, which would reduce the concentration of water.

Thus, if you put protein or DNA in water, the water will combine with them and break them up into their respective building blocks.

There is a condition called “equilibrium” in which the rate of reaction going forward (reactant molecules combining) is the same as the rate going backward (product molecules uncombining). Concentrations of reactants and products are at steady state in equilibrium since they are being formed and unformed at equal rates. Amino acids in water will combine to produce 1% dipeptides, 0.01% tripeptides, and less than one in  $10^{20}$  (0.000000000000000001%) will exist in a chain of 10 amino acids. This is a tremendous problem for evolutionists, because the smallest proteins in living systems are about 70 amino acids long.

Additions of long periods of time do not help either. In fact time becomes the enemy, because the longer the time, the more the state is driven to equilibrium in which are negligible quantities of proteins, especially of the length needed for living systems.

### **Information theory and language systems**

All languages have meanings assigned to their means of conveyance, whether they be words, letters or codes. The meanings must first be developed and understood before they can be conveyed or interpreted. Without a preexisting language convention understood by the writer and

the reader, the words, letters or codes would be meaningless. Languages cannot develop randomly; all languages are developed by an intelligent mind.

There is no evidence that nucleotides, the building blocks of DNA, have ever come about by chance chemistry, but if they did, and if they randomly assembled into DNA, they would contain no information. If the four nucleotides of DNA—abbreviated A, T, G and C—were randomly assembled, it would be like the shapes of the letters of the English alphabet being randomly assembled onto a page; neither would contain any meaning. Meaning must first be assigned to the letters by some intelligence, the letters must be assembled into a meaningful order per the language convention, and the language must be understood by the reader in order to be interpreted. This cannot come about by chance. This can only come about by intelligent means. In fact, the introduction of randomness into a language is destructive to it or even lethal. A single incorrect character in a computer program can cause it to fail.

The DNA code is highly sophisticated, and it is vastly more complicated than any computer program in existence today. It is:

- Digital.
- Error-correcting (molecules travel along the length and “feel” for errors).
- Redundant (critical code segments are backed up in other areas of the chain, in case that section of the chain becomes damaged).
- Overlapping and tightly compressed (sections of one code overlap with sections of another having the same code). This would be like removing the spaces from this sentence, putting them back in elsewhere, and still having an intelligible sentence.
- Semantic (has grammar, punctuation, syntax).
- An enormously sophisticated information storage and retrieval system.

The code is far, far more sophisticated than any computer program man has ever devised. It is a product of a genius so vast that it is beyond comprehension.

Language units such as sounds or shapes or codes have no inherent meaning in and of themselves; an intelligent mind is required to assign meaning to them. Dots and dashes have no inherent meaning, and a series of dots and dashes would be look like meaningless gibberish. But if an intelligence assigns meaning to the order of dots and dashes, and conveys the rules to a second party, the second party could recognize the language as Morse code. Similarly, nucleotides have no inherent meaning. An intelligence had to assign meaning to the order of

nucleotides, and convey those rules to the cellular machinery which reads this language and manufactures the complex biomolecules of life. Again, languages must come about by intelligent minds and cannot come about by chance. It is not possible.

Of course God created the DNA code and the cellular machinery capable of reading it.

### **Monkeys on typewriters**

Evolutionists often argue that given enough time DNA could randomly form. There was a debate in 1860 in England between Archbishop Samuel Wilberforce and evolutionist Thomas Huxley. Wilberforce argued that where there was design there must be a Designer. Huxley argued that if a monkey typed randomly on a typewriter for a long enough time, he would eventually produce the works of William Shakespeare.

Huxley was right; however his analogy did not accurately represent the reality of chemical reactions in the real world. In the real world, the combining and uncombining of biological building blocks would both be occurring. In an equilibrium condition—the steady state condition that would develop after a long period of time—the combining and uncombining occurs at equal rates and would never reach more than a few “letters” being combined.

Thus, if we were to adjust the analogy to match the real world, the monkey would be typing and erasing letters at an equal rate, and would never get more than a few letters on the page regardless of whether he typed for a hundred or a billion or a billion billion billion years. Moreover, to even more accurately reflect reality, each letter of the typewriter would have to have a second mirror image of itself (left- and right-handed letters), and if the mirror image were ever used, it would be lethal to any developing biomolecular chain. Thus, since each letter image and mirror image have equal chance of being typed, every other keystroke would be fatal.

The conclusion: not even one of the thousands of biomolecular chains (protein, DNA) required by living systems could have come about by chance.

A single human cell contains the equivalent of ten thousand 300-page books of information, and all of this fits into a nucleus which has a diameter of about a hundredth of a millimeter. The DNA in the human body's 100 trillion cells if printed in books would fill a container the size of the Empire State Building 760 million times.

Again, the monkey would never get past a few letters, let alone a sentence, and certainly let alone this vast amount of information.

### **Change by mutation?**

The mechanism of change in evolution is the mutation. However, mutations are extremely rare and almost always harmful. Only about one in ten billion cell divisions results in a mutation, and only one in ten thousand mutations is potentially beneficial. The rest are either fatal, harmful or at best neutral.

There would be thousands and thousands of harmful mutations for any beneficial one. The inescapable mathematical result of this tremendous informational contamination would be that the population would die off long before any beneficial structure or new species could ever develop.

Geneticists have concluded that the population of any species would accumulate so many harmful traits that it would become extinct long before it would accumulate any beneficial change.

An analogy would be the random introduction of code into a computer program. With 9,999 fatal or harmful changes for every potentially helpful one, the computer program would be fatally compromised long before any beneficial trait could ever be incorporated and copied for future use.

These facts are absolutely fatal to the theory of evolution.

### **Transitional forms**

If evolution were happening, there would have to be so many transitional forms (species gradually transitioning from one form to another) that we'd be swimming in a sea if not a universe of their fossils. Indeed, all the matter in the universe couldn't contain their numbers.

However none has ever been found.

### **Irreducible complexity**

The theory of evolution teaches that new species form when there are genetic mutations which result in more favorable traits which increase the chance of survival and reproduction. Organisms with beneficial mutations would be "naturally selected" and their genes concentrated in a

population, and those without the beneficial trait would die off. Eventually, after enough change, new species would form.

The problem with this theory is that structures in living systems are made of multiple subcomponents, all of which are needed for the system as a whole to function. For example, the visual system consists of about 40 subsystems, such as the cornea, iris, lens, retina, millions of rods and cones, muscles which move the eye and adjust the lens, the optic nerve with its million nerve fibers, and the portion of the brain which processes the visual signals. If any of the subsystems are missing, there is no vision. However, none of the individual subcomponents give the organism any survivability benefit and would therefore not have been selected for preservation through the process of natural selection.

For example, imagine a sightless organism like a worm which happened to have a genetic mutation whereby it was born with a bit of lens tissue on its forehead. It would not be able to see and would have no increased chance of survival, so the trait would not be passed on but would die out.

Evolution has no explanation for how a system such as the eye can evolve through the gradual addition of multiple subsystems when none of the individual subsystems give it any increased survivability advantage. Since each subsystem is meaningless outside the whole, each would be eliminated before they could combine with the others and actually work.

The eye is amazingly complex. To give an example, it was calculated in 1985 that it would take 200 years of a Cray supercomputer's time to process the billions of simultaneous non-linear differential equations the retinas of two human eyes process every second! Another interesting phenomenon is the minute eyeball motions—tremors, drifts and saccades—caused by six muscles which allow us to see. The tremors, for example, are tiny eyeball wobbles with a diameter a hundredth the width of a human hair occurring about 50 times a second. These constantly change minutely what we see and allow slight variation to the light impacting the retina; without this variation, anything without motion in our visual field would fade to gray.<sup>2</sup>

Darwin himself said, "To suppose that the eye with all its inimitable contrivances for adjusting the focus to different distances, for admitting different amounts of light, and for the correction of spherical and chromatic aberration, could have been formed by natural selection, seems, I freely confess, absurd in the highest degree."<sup>3</sup> By the way, Darwin didn't come up with the idea of evolution. A Greek by the name of Anaximander came

---

<sup>2</sup> Tom Wagner, "Darwin vs. the eye," *Creation ex nihilo* 16(4):10–13, September 1994.

<sup>3</sup> Darwin, Charles. *The Origin of Species*, J.M. Dent & Sons Ltd, London, 1971, p. 167.

up with the idea in the 6th century B.C., beating Darwin by 24 centuries. The devil has been using this lie for many centuries.

Another example is the formation of a wing. Evolutionists would suggest that the arm of a reptile had gradual mutations whereby its scales were transformed into feathers. However, being burdened with feathers without the ability to fly in the transitional state would be a disadvantage to the reptile, so this trait would die out long before any wing could develop, let alone two wings. Eye components without sight or half of a wing are useless, so natural selection would eliminate them and never allow the whole to form.

Still further, major systems of the body are interconnected to other major systems of the body in very complicated ways. For example, the visual system is connected to the digestive system (seeing food causes salivation) and the reflex system (seeing danger triggers movement or flight).

The idea of irreducible complexity is fatal to evolution.

### **Punctuated equilibrium**

Since evolution cannot explain a gradual accumulation of non-beneficial subsystems leading toward a beneficial system whole, and there is an absence of transitional forms, evolutionists have come up with the idea of “punctuated equilibrium,” whereby entire new species come about in a single generation (called a “hopeful monster”), something like a bird being born to a reptile.

But, for the sake of argument, let’s grant that there were billions of simultaneous chance beneficial changes to the genetic code in a single generation such that a fully-formed bird was born to a reptile. For that bird then to reproduce, another “hopeful monster” bird of the opposite sex must have been miraculously born to another reptile, at the same time, near the same place, and the two must have then met, and mated with each other. Talk about miracles! This is fantasy, not science.

But they are right in the sense that new species had to come about miraculously, all at once, which they did, by God, when He created them.

### **Micro- vs. macroevolution**

Microevolution is variation within a species, and occurs when existing genetic material is shuffled into a different order. This does exist.

Examples are bugs developing resistance to insecticides or moths changing colors to better blend in with the background. There is no creation of new information, only reshuffling of existing information.

Macroevolution, by contrast, is the production of new species by the introduction of new genetic material through mutation. This has never been observed.

It is sometimes argued that bacteria developing resistance to antibiotics are an example of macroevolution. However, in 1989 autopsies were done on men buried and frozen above the Arctic Circle since 1849. Cultures of their intestinal bacteria were taken, and it was discovered that these bacteria were resistant to synthetic antibiotics which hadn't even been invented until the 1980s! This clearly showed that there already existed genetic information for antibiotic resistance within the bacteria, and it was absolutely not the case where resistance developed after exposure to the antibiotic by introduction of new genetic material through mutation. This is a case of microevolution, variation of preexisting genetic material, not macroevolution, introduction of new genetic material. God, in His infinite wisdom, created bacteria with this genetic resistance, because if man in his tinkering was able to inadvertently wipe out bacteria on earth through antibiotics, life would cease to exist.

Students today are being misled in this area. They are shown examples of microevolution as proof of macroevolution. Again, microevolution, the reshuffling of existing information, does exist; macroevolution, the creation of new species through mutations, does not.

### **Vestigial organs?**

Evolutionists sometime argue that structures such as the appendix or tail bone have no function and are left over structures from a time when humans were another species. However, the tail bone and appendix do have functions, as do all other so-called vestigial structures.

The tail bone serves to anchor muscle groups in that area of the body; the appendix bolsters the immune system in young children. These are not functionless vestiges of past species, but have definite purpose now.

Creation evangelist Kent Hovind once offered to pay for the operation to remove the tail bone of an evolutionist who claimed it was just a useless vestigial structure! The evolutionist declined the offer.

## Hitler and evolution

Hitler was an evolutionist. He refers to evolution many times in his book *Mein Kampf*. Evolution teaches that the process of natural selection weeds out the inferior in favor of the superior. Hitler believed there were superior and inferior races, and he sought to give evolution a helping hand by assisting evolution in the elimination of inferior races, which would then lead to the creation of a master race. This led to the holocaust of the Jews.

Explains creation evangelist Dr. Kent Hovind,<sup>4</sup>

*“In Hitler’s book Mein Kampf...he said, ‘even less does nature desire the blending of a higher with a lower race.’ Who’s a higher and a lower race, Adolf? Hitler kept talking about the ‘Aryan blood’ and ‘lower peoples.’ Who’s an Aryan anyway? Well, I found Hitler’s hit list... Here’s the list Hitler was using. Hitler thought the blond haired, blue-eyed Nordic, were close to pure Aryan, the superior race...And, he thought the Germans were mostly Aryan. The Mediterraneans were slightly Aryan; the Slavics were half-Aryan, half-ape; the Orientals are slightly ape; the black Africans are predominantly ape; and the Jews are close to pure ape. Hitler killed the Jews because he honestly thought he was speeding up the process of evolution by eliminating what he thought were the inferiors.”*

Six million Jews died as a consequence of Hitler’s belief in the dangerous lie of evolution.

The Bible teaches that God values all people greatly and equally. There are only two types of people, those who have received Jesus Christ as their Lord and Savior, and those who have not. The saved and the unsaved. There is no other distinction.

*Gal 3:26-28, For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. (KJV)*

---

<sup>4</sup> Creation Seminar, The Dangers of Evolution, DVD. Available at <http://drdino.com/>. A highly recommended series. [http://wiseoldgoat.com/papers-creation/old/hovind-seminar\\_part5c\\_2003.html](http://wiseoldgoat.com/papers-creation/old/hovind-seminar_part5c_2003.html)

*Acts 10:34-35, Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him. (KJV)*

### **Why do some people believe in a lie?**

The Bible teaches that the existence and nature of God can be clearly seen by the things which God made, that is, by all of creation.

*Rom 1:20, For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: (KJV)*

And it goes on to teach that those who are engaged in habitual sin once knew God, but did not glorify or thank Him, and exchanged their knowledge of the truth of God for the lie. God then gave them up to the vile passions, including homosexuality, which were in their hearts.

*Rom 1:21-32, because, although they knew God, they did not glorify Him as God, nor were thankful, but became futile in their thoughts, and their foolish hearts were darkened. Professing to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man-- and birds and four-footed animals and creeping things. Therefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, in the lusts of their hearts, to dishonor their bodies among themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for the lie, and worshiped and served the creature rather than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen. For this reason God gave them up to vile passions. For even their women exchanged the natural use for what is against nature. Likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust for one another, men with men committing what is shameful, and receiving in themselves the penalty of their error which was due. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind, to do those things which are not fitting; being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual*

*immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil-mindedness; they are whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful; who, knowing the righteous judgment of God, that those who practice such things are worthy of death, not only do the same but also approve of those who practice them. (NKJ)*

*Ps 53:1, The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. Corrupt are they, and have done abominable iniquity: there is none that doeth good. (KJV)*

## **Conclusion**

The evolution formula is:

- matter + energy + chance + lots of time = life

The creation formula is:

- matter + energy + transcendent intelligence = life

You can either worship the god of chance, for which there is no evidence and therefore vast amounts of faith are required, or you can worship the God of the Bible, and His Son Jesus Christ, for Whom there is vast evidence and, since there is such vast amounts of evidence, really only minimal faith is required.

*Josh 24:14-15, Now therefore fear the LORD, and serve him in sincerity and in truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve ye the LORD. And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD. (KJV)*

Science today knows what the Bible has been saying all along, that space, matter, time and energy all had a beginning. Scientists who have studied

the true mathematics and science behind the origin of life know that the scientific laws of the dimension in which we live absolutely will not allow life to develop, and the only way life could have begun on earth is by a transcendent, intelligent Being who is able to exist outside of our dimension. That is exactly how the God of the Bible is described.

Thus you have a choice: worship the god of chance, which has essentially zero chance of existing, and face eternal damnation, or worship the God of the Bible, and His Son Jesus Christ, Who has essentially 100% chance of existing, and spend eternity in heaven.

Choose life!

*Deut 30:19, I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: (KJV)*



And this is just for one single-celled organism. Imagine how much further remote it would be for the evolution of a human being, which consists of about 100 trillion individual cells, all highly specialized and exquisitely coordinated with each other.

Would you bet a dollar that life could occur by chance with these odds? Would you bet your house? Would you bet your eternal soul? I doubt even the most zealous evolutionist would bet a dollar or his car or his house on those odds. Ask one and see! But they are willing to bet something infinitely more valuable—their eternal souls—on these impossible odds. Why? Because they strongly refuse to give up their sins, and substitute the pursuit of their own will for that of God's.

*John 3:19-20, [Jesus said] "And this is the condemnation, that the light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For everyone practicing evil hates the light and does not come to the light, lest his deeds should be exposed." (NKJ)*

But God loves them, and they can change, if only they believe in Jesus Christ and receive Him as Lord. Receiving Him as Lord means putting His will ahead of their own; that is, obeying Him.

*John 3:16-17, [Jesus said] "For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved." (NKJ)*

*John 1:12, But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: (KJV)*

### **What is impossible?**

Science generally defines anything with a chance less than one in  $10^{50}$  as to be so remote that it can be considered impossible<sup>2</sup> or miraculous.  $10^{50}$  is a hundred thousand billion billion billion billion billion. However, even if we were to make this a thousand billion billion billion times larger, it only increases the number to one in  $10^{80}$ , which is the estimated number of

<sup>2</sup> Emile Borél, *Probability and Life*, Presses Universitaire de France, 1962.

atoms in the universe, still vastly less than one chance in  $10^{100,000,000,000}$ , the chance of a single bacterium coming about by chance.

By this standard the evolution of life is well beyond impossible.

### **What about increased time?**

We already discussed how increased time favors an equilibrium condition in which the presence of biomolecules are either non-existent or negligible in concentration. But let's set that aside for now, because these odds actually do include time in their calculation.

The universe is estimated to be about 14 billion years old. That's  $7.4 \times 10^{15}$  minutes. Let's add a lot more time. Let's say the universe is a billion billion times older, or 14 billion billion billion years old. That would be  $7.4 \times 10^{33}$  minutes.

To further stack the odds, let's say that the entire universe is nothing but crushed up E. coli bacteria. In fact the universe is mostly hydrogen, so this should give evolution, which is wheezing on its death bed, a tremendous infusion of hope, one would think. There are an estimated  $10^{80}$  atoms in the universe. An E. coli bacterium has  $2 \times 10^{10}$  atoms. If the entire universe were nothing but disassembled E. coli atoms, there would be the equivalent number of atoms to produce  $5 \times 10^{69}$  E. coli.

E. coli takes about 20 minutes to divide (replicate itself). Let's use that same amount of time for the potential spontaneous generation or random assembly of an E. coli from component atoms. There would then be  $3.7 \times 10^{32}$  20-minute periods in 14 billion billion billion years. Multiplying this by the number of potential bacteria gives  $1.9 \times 10^{102}$  chance trials for random assembly.<sup>3</sup>

The odds then of a bacteria coming together by chance from a universe composed of nothing but crushed up bacteria over 14 billion billion billion years would then be  $(2 \times 10^{102} \text{ chance trials}) / (10^{100,000,000,000} \text{ chance trials needed})$ , or one chance in  $5 \times 10^{99,999,999,897}$ , still vanishingly negligible, and not much different than our original one chance in  $10^{100,000,000,000}$ , despite our enormously generous stacking of the odds. Moreover, it matters little whether more time is added or even more mass or if the replication speed is lessened; the science and the numbers are simply too monumentally against the random assembly of complex structures for this to be a reasonably prospect. These numbers absolutely kill evolution. But few

---

<sup>3</sup> A similar illustration, but confined to oceans on earth, was given by Robert Shapiro in his book, *Origins—a Sceptics Guide to the Creation of Life on Earth*, Summit Books, New York, 1986.

know it because these facts are not widely publicized, and the impossibility—evolution—is still taught as fact.

Evolutionists who know the real science know evolution is dead. That is why they are desperately scrambling to come up with new theories, like Directed Panspermia, which proposes that aliens seeded planet earth with life. But this only transfers the problem to the aliens. Where did they come from?

Again, which position requires more faith? To believe in something whose odds are essentially zero (evolution) or to believe in something whose odds are essentially 100% (creation)?

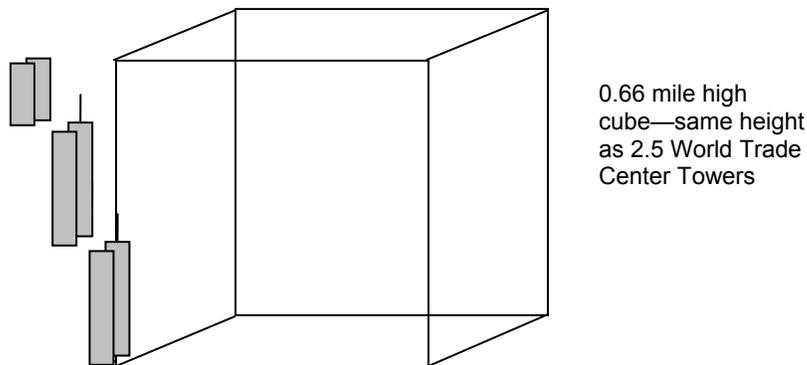
### A model for understanding these vast probabilities

#### Grains of salt

Get up for a moment now and pour a bit of table salt into your hand.

Now take a look at the size of the grains of salt. Each grain of salt is a cube of about  $\frac{1}{2}$  mm on each side.

Now imagine a huge cube with each side measuring the height of 2.5 World Trade Center towers stacked on top of each other. Since each tower was a quarter mile high. This would be a cube 0.66 miles high.



Now imagine pouring salt into that huge cube until it was filled to the top. That's a lot of salt! The number of salt grains would be about 5.6 billion billion, which can be expressed as  $5.6 \times 10^{18}$  ( $5,600,000,000,000,000,000$ )<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>4</sup> Size of cube accounts for air space between grains. Bulk density, or packing density, of salt is 53% of its pure density. If there were no air space, the cube would be 0.5 mi on each side.

### **The size of atoms**

Atoms are very small. In fact, atoms are so small that there would be the same number of atoms in a single grain of salt as there would be grains of salt in the 0.66-mile cube in the above example! That's a lot of salt grains in that cube, and that's a lot of tiny atoms in that little grain of salt! Have another look at those salt grains in your hand and think about that.

### **Simple probability**

If I had a deck of cards, and I had you try to pick a single card, say the king of hearts, what is the probability that you could randomly pick it in one try? The probability would be 1 out of the total number of cards. Since there are 52 cards, the probability would be 1/52.

Going back now to the 0.66-mile wide cube filled with salt grains. What if I were to color one of the grains in the half-mile cube black, and then blindfold you, give you a shovel, and have you dig into and tunnel around that half-mile wide cube of salt grains and randomly pick one grain? What would be the probability of you picking the single black grain that I had marked? Just like with the cards, it would be 1 out of the total number of grains, or one out of  $5.6 \times 10^{18}$ .

Since there are also  $5.6 \times 10^{18}$  atoms in a single grain of salt, the odds of you randomly picking a single atom that I had marked within a grain of salt would be the same, one out of  $5.6 \times 10^{18}$ .

### **Compound probability**

Compound probability is the probability of doing something more than once.

As we saw before, the chance of randomly picking one atom that I had marked within a grain of salt would be one out of  $5.6 \times 10^{18}$ . What would the chance be of picking one atom that I had marked in a grain of salt twice in a row? To calculate the probability of multiple events, just multiply the probability of the individual events. The probability would be  $1/5.6 \times 10^{18} \times 1/5.6 \times 10^{18}$ , or one out of  $3.1 \times 10^{37}$ .

### **How many atoms in the universe?**

If there are that many atoms in a tiny grain of salt, imagine how many there are in the entire earth, which weighs 5,882,000,000,000,000,000 (5.8 billion trillion) tons and has a diameter of about 8,000 miles! And if there are that many atoms in the earth, imagine how many there would be in the sun, which would hold about 1.3 million earths. And if there are that many in the sun, imagine how many there would be in the Milky Way Galaxy, which has about 100 billion stars. And if there are that many in the Milky Way Galaxy, imagine how many there would be in the whole universe, which contains an estimated 125 billion galaxies.

How many atoms would that be?

About  $10^{80}$ , or a 1 followed by 80 zeroes.

$10^{80}$  is an almost inconceivably immense number.

### **What is the Probability of picking a single atom in the entire universe?**

What if I marked a single atom in all of the vast universe. Then I gave you a spaceship to see if you could randomly select the one I had marked. First, you'd have to travel to a single galaxy out the 125 billion galaxies in the universe, then you'd have to pick a single star among the 100 billion stars of that galaxy, then you'd have to pick a single volume the size of the earth among the million-or-so earth volumes in that star, or you could pick a planet or moon or asteroid near that star, then you'd have to narrow it down further to a single volume the size of a grain of salt, and then pick a single atom within that volume. The chance that you could pick the one atom that I had marked in the whole of the universe would be one out of  $10^{80}$ . The chance of your picking it would clearly be remote in the extreme.

### **What is the equivalent probability of a single bacterium coming together by chance from a universe composed of nothing but crushed up bacteria over 14 billion billion billion years?**

As discussed earlier, the odds of this happening would be about one chance in  $5 \times 10^{99,999,999,897}$ .

This would be equivalent to you randomly picking a single atom that I had marked in the entire universe not just one time, but 1.25 billion times in a row without once missing!

Note: just to count to 1.25 billion would take 40 years without rest at one number per second.

Basically impossible. And well beyond the one in  $10^{50}$  odds generally considered to define the impossible or miraculous.

To expect this to happen would be highly unreasonable (the evolutionist's position).

To expect that it wouldn't happen would be highly reasonable (the creationist's position).

### **Another model to understand these vast probabilities**

Here's another way to look at it. What if there were a trillion trillion universes forming a trillion trillion times a second for the last trillion trillion years? Can you imagine the vast number of atoms there? There would be about  $10^{159}$  atoms. That is an enormous number.

Now imagine that for every one of those atoms formed there were a trillion trillion universes forming a trillion trillion times a second for the last trillion trillion years; and again for every one of those atoms there were a trillion trillion universes forming a trillion trillion times a second for the last trillion trillion years; and again for every one of those atoms there were a trillion trillion universes forming a trillion trillion times a second for the last trillion trillion years, etc., repeating this process another 629 million times, then what would be the chance you could pick a single atom out of that whole bunch?

You guessed it, the same as the chance that a bacteria could randomly assemble by chance from a universe composed of nothing but crushed up bacteria over 14 billion billion billion years.

To expect that this has happened would be highly unreasonable (the evolutionist's position).

To expect that this hasn't happened would be highly reasonable (the creationist's position).

And if it didn't happen, there is only one alternative: creation by a transcendent God.

One can conclude with extreme scientific reasonableness, and really only minimal faith, that there is a Creator God, and that He created the universe!

### **Don't be a fool!**

Did you know that Jesus Christ taught us to call no man fool?

*Matt 5:22, [Jesus said] "But I say to you that... whoever says, 'You fool!' shall be in danger of hell fire." (NKJ)*

But God Himself calls those who do not believe in Him fools.

*Ps 14:1, The fool has said in his heart, There is no God..." (NKJ)*

You can see why God would say this. Anyone who would bet their eternal souls on the odds described above, and turn down the free gift of eternal salvation through faith in Jesus Christ in so doing, truly is a fool. The atheist is placing a bet with odds of winning at one out of  $10^{100,000,000,000}$ , but if he loses he goes to hell. A foolish bet, truly.

But Jesus Christ died on the cross so that our sins could be forgiven. He rose from the dead three days later and is alive today. Behold, He knocks at the door of your heart. Do you hear His voice? In his hand he offers you a free pardon for your sins. Will you open the door? Will you receive His free gift? Will you receive Jesus Christ now?

*Rom 10:9, that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. (NKJ)*

### **Why are the odds so low? A chemistry lesson**

This section really gets to the heart of the science and presents the "E=mc<sup>2</sup>" formula for demonstrating why life could never have come about by chance. This section is a little technical, but it's short and you will be

rewarded with increased understanding, especially in defeating some of the evolutionist's more deceptive arguments. Pay close attention!

The reason these odds are so wildly against the spontaneous formation of complex molecular structures is because of the Second Law of Thermodynamics, which basically states that entropy (or disorder) will increase over time. This law is powerfully, powerfully, powerfully against the formation of complex molecules and ordered structures, and powerfully, powerfully, powerfully in favor of the disintegration of complex molecules and ordered structures.

If you threw a hamburger into the ocean, would you expect it to stay together or dissolve away? Once dissolved, would you ever expect it to spontaneously reassemble itself?

There is a concept in the field of chemistry and physics called Gibbs Free Energy (G). It is basically the energy available in a system to do work, such as the work of assembling complex molecules. For any chemical reaction to occur spontaneously, the change in G (abbreviated  $\Delta G$  or delta G) must be negative. However, the complicated molecules found in living systems, such as amino acids, proteins, nucleotides, DNA, fats, sugars, etc., all have  $\Delta G$ s which are positive, which means they do not form spontaneously.

The following equation determines whether a chemical reaction will occur spontaneously or not:

$$\Delta G = \Delta H - T\Delta S,$$

Where,

- $\Delta G$  is the change in Gibbs Free Energy (if negative, reaction is spontaneous; if positive, it is not spontaneous);
- $\Delta H$  is the change in enthalpy or heat content (if negative, reaction produces heat, which is lost to its surroundings—called an exothermic reaction; if positive, reaction requires heat, which is gained from its surroundings—called an endothermic reaction);
- T is the absolute temperature (always positive); and
- $\Delta S$  is the change in entropy or disorder (if negative, reaction decreases disorder; if positive, reaction increases disorder).

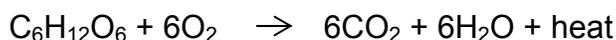
As an example, let's look at the spontaneous formation of glucose (a sugar molecule) from carbon dioxide and water:



*(this reaction not spontaneous because  $\Delta G$  is positive)*

- This reaction requires heat, so it has a positive  $\Delta H$
- This reaction goes from 12 reactants to 7 products, and so there is an increase in order. This means there is a decrease in disorder, so  $\Delta S$  will be negative and therefore  $-T\Delta S$  positive.
- For this reaction, since both  $\Delta H$  and  $-T\Delta S$  are positive,  $\Delta G = \Delta H - T\Delta S$  is also positive, so the reaction will not occur spontaneously. Again, only reactions with a negative  $\Delta G$  will occur spontaneously.

Reactions which do not occur spontaneously in the forward direction do proceed spontaneously in the reverse direction. So while the forward direction of this reaction does not occur spontaneously, the reverse of this reaction, the reaction of glucose with oxygen to produce carbon dioxide and water, does occur spontaneously.



*(this reaction is spontaneous because  $\Delta G$  is negative)*

If we were to put a mixture of water, carbon dioxide, oxygen and glucose all together, the glucose and oxygen would begin to spontaneously combine to form water and carbon dioxide. If we waited long enough, the solution would eventually come to a steady state condition in which the concentrations of all species no longer changed. This is called "chemical equilibrium" and it basically means that the rate of the reaction in the forward direction is the same as the rate in the reverse direction. Reactions with strongly positive  $\Delta G$ s (such as those which form complex biomolecules) will proceed strongly in the reverse direction until the products are negligible. Thus, biomolecules will not spontaneously form to begin with, and if they are present they will spontaneously uncombine.

As a rule of thumb, most reactions which are spontaneous go in the direction of producing heat (exothermic) and in the direction of increasing disorder (fewer to greater numbers), although there are some exceptions, and this is where the evolutionist's deceptive argument comes into play. One example would be the freezing of water, where disordered water molecules in a liquid phase become neatly ordered into a crystalline solid. Evolutionists will sometimes use examples like this to support their argument for the spontaneous formation of more ordered systems of

complex molecules in living systems. However, let's look at the science, remembering the formula  $\Delta G = \Delta H - T\Delta S$ .

- When water freezes, there is a decrease in disorder, which makes  $\Delta S$  and  $T\Delta S$  negative and therefore  $-T\Delta S$  positive.
- When water freezes there is also a loss of heat, making  $\Delta H$  negative.



- At temperatures below freezing,  $\Delta H$  is more negative than  $-T\Delta S$  is positive, making  $\Delta G$  negative, which means the water will freeze spontaneously.
- At temperatures above freezing,  $-T\Delta S$  is more positive than  $\Delta H$  is negative, making  $\Delta G$  positive, which means the water will not freeze spontaneously.

Water freezing spontaneously at temperatures below freezing to produce increased order is in full accord with the laws of thermodynamics because  $\Delta G$  is negative. Complex biomolecules forming spontaneously to produce increased order is in violation of the laws of thermodynamics because their  $\Delta G$ s are positive. Thus, the evolutionist's argument of citing examples of decreased entropy (disorder) in nature to support formation of complex biomolecules is ignorant of the science. Don't let them fool you.

It is interesting how, among the many sciences, the "science" of evolution is the only one which completely ignores and violates the proven concepts of chemistry and physics.

Living matter consists of atoms bonded to one another. Energy is required for one atom to bond with another, and once bonded, the energy is stored in that bond. For a single-celled *E. coli* bacterium to have spontaneously formed from individual atoms, energy equivalent to all of the bond energies stored in the *E. coli* bacterium would have to have flowed into the system from its surroundings. An analogy to the spontaneous formation of an *E. coli* bacterium from individual atoms, and the flow of energy which would be required, would be a body of water at 86 °F spontaneously having 20% of its volume vaporize into superheated gas with a temperature of 538 °F (this would be analogous to the energy taken from the surroundings for the *E. coli* formation), while 80% of its volume spontaneously freezes into a supercooled solid with a temperature of minus 199 °F (this would be analogous to the energy given by the surroundings for *E. coli* formation).<sup>5</sup> You'd have to stare at a body of

---

<sup>5</sup> Calculated from the total bond energies in *E. coli* (Morowitz, op. cit. p. 66) and the dry mass of *E. coli* ( $3 \times 10^{-13}$ g), to get an energy density of 697 cal/g. This amount of heat will be released by the freezing of 80% of a body of water at 86 °F to -199 °F, which in turn will vaporize 20% of that body to 538 °F.

water for a long, long time before that would ever happen. Pretty-much forever, in fact. It just isn't going to happen.

Such is the power of going against the grain of available free energy. Yet evolutionists are sitting by the water, watching, waiting, betting their eternal souls that it will happen or has happened. Astonishing! But, as discussed earlier, it is really their stubborn refusal to give up their own will and doing what they want to do, and taking on the Lord's will and doing what He wants them to do; for admitting there is a Creator, and receiving Him as Lord, necessitates this.

### **Heat death of the universe**

No matter the reaction, the Second Law of Thermodynamics requires an overall increase of disorder (entropy) for all processes. Thus, if water freezes, the surroundings heat up, and the surroundings will have a greater increase in entropy than the decrease from the water freezing. The laws of thermodynamics predict that over time there will be a decrease in free energy available to do work, an increase in the disorder, and an evening out of temperature. If the universe were infinitely old, free energy would be gone, disorder would be maximized and the temperature of everything in the universe would be the same. This is the so-called Heat Death of the Universe. Thus science predicts a wearing out and winding down of the universe. What does the Bible say?

*Isa 51:6, ...the earth shall wax old like a garment...(KJV)*

The fact that the universe is not presently all at the same temperature also proves it is not infinitely old, but had a beginning, just as the Bible describes.

*Gen 1:1, In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. (KJV)*

### **Then how do living systems exist if biomolecules don't form spontaneously?**

In living systems, the synthesis of complex molecules such as proteins or DNA, which have positive  $\Delta G$ s, and therefore do not form spontaneously, is accomplished by the ingenious coupling of reactions with positive  $\Delta G$ s to reactions with negative  $\Delta G$ s. Since the  $\Delta G$ s of multiple linked reactions

are additive, as long as the overall  $\Delta G$  is negative the reactions with negative  $\Delta G$ s will drive those with positive  $\Delta G$ s. These systems reveal a Creator mind of astonishing genius.

In living systems, this is largely accomplished by the burning of sugar (reacting it with oxygen, negative  $\Delta G$ ), which drives the formation of a molecule called ATP (positive  $\Delta G$ ). ATP then splits into ADP + P (negative  $\Delta G$ ) which drives most of the reactions in the body which have positive  $\Delta G$ s, such as the synthesis of complex biomolecules which would never form randomly outside of living systems.

These biochemical cycles and pathways are incredibly complex and ingeniously designed. They can only have come from a mind of such incredible genius as to be utterly beyond our comprehension or description. Such is the mind of our Lord God and Savior Jesus Christ, by Whom all things were made.

*John 1:3, In the beginning was the Word [Jesus Christ], and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. (KJV)*

### **The evolutionist's "open system" argument**

Evolutionists sometimes argue that the earth is an open system with the sun providing a continuous supply of energy, and that this can provide the heat energy needed to drive reactions with positive  $\Delta G$ s. However, the sun is kind of like a brute beast which just dumbly spews out heat. Just plain heat is not sufficient to drive the formation of complex biomolecules; in fact, it has a destructive effect. The heat must be accompanied by some sort of intelligent apparatus designed to convert the heat energy into energy which is capable of driving these non-spontaneous reactions. What type of apparatus? Like the staggeringly complex apparatus of plants using sunlight to produce sugar, and the exquisitely intricate machinery of animals using sugar to drive the ATP/ADP cycle which powers the synthesis of complex molecules with positive  $\Delta G$ s.

These temporary apparatuses, or machines, which we call bodies, in which our eternal spirits reside, are truly glorious creations and marvels of engineering design. They reveal an awesome Creator of staggering genius.

*Ps 139:14, I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. (KJV)*

Machines are purposeful aggregates of matter that use energy to perform work. Living systems, even down to the molecular level, are machines. A single living cell is a machine by far more complicated than any machine ever made by man. Yet it is highly miniaturized, which requires even more engineering skill.

But one day the spirit will be separated from the machine body. And if you abide not with Jesus Christ, you will not go to heaven.

*John 14:6, Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me. (NKJ)*

Are you tired and weary? Go to Jesus. He loves you.

*Matt 11:28-30, Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light. (KJV)*

*Rom 10:13, For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. (KJV)*

### **Proof of Jesus Christ as Savior and the Only Way for Salvation**

If God created us, He certainly has the ability to get a message to us. How does He do it?

One way is by prophecy, which is telling the future in advance. Only God can do this, and only the Bible authenticates itself as being from God by telling the future in advance.

*Deut 18:22, "when a prophet speaks in the name of the LORD, if the thing does not happen or come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD has not spoken..."*

What is prophecy all about? Jesus Christ.

*Rev 19:10, "For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."*

There are over 350 prophecies in the Old Testament about the first coming of Jesus Christ. Examples:

- He would be born in Bethlehem.
  - Micah 5:2; fulfilled in Matt. 2:1-7; John 7:42; Luke 2:47.
- He would be preceded by a Messenger.
  - Isaiah 40:3; Malachi 3:1; fulfilled in Matthew 3:1-3; 11:10; John 1:23; Luke 1:17.
- He would enter Jerusalem on a donkey.
  - Zechariah 9:9; fulfilled in Luke 35-37; Matthew 21:6-11.
- He would be betrayed by a friend.
  - Psalms 41:9; 55:12-14; fulfilled in Matthew 10:4; 26:49-50; John 13:21.
- He would be sold for 30 pieces of silver.
  - Zechariah 11:12; fulfilled in Matthew 26:15; 27:3.
- The money for which He is sold is to be thrown "to the potter" in God's house.
  - Zechariah 11:13; fulfilled in Matthew 27:5-7.
- He would be silent before His accusers.
  - Isaiah 53:7; fulfilled in Matthew 27:12.
- He would be executed by crucifixion (hands and feet pierced) with other transgressors.
  - Psalm 22:16; Zechariah 12:10; Isaiah 53:5,12; fulfilled in Luke 23:33; John 20:25; Matthew 27:38; Mark 15:27,28.
- He would be born of a virgin;
- He would be born before Judah lost the ability to exercise law and justice, including the imposition of the death penalty;
- He would be called out of Egypt;

- He would be called a Nazarene;
- He would be a descendent of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Judah;
- He would be in the line of King David;
- People would gamble over His clothes;
- He would present Himself as Messiah on exactly April 6, 32 AD;
  - This is the most astounding prophecy in the Bible. See Chapter 11 for more details.
- He would open the eyes of the blind and the ears of the deaf; and make the lame leap like a deer, and the tongue of the dumb to sing.
- And many more. Some estimate 456 in total.

Many of these are one in a billion or much higher probabilities, and some have never happened before, but just for the sake of argument, let's say that they have an average probability of one in 1,000. This is very conservative.

To calculate the probability of multiple probabilities occurring at once, the individual probabilities are multiplied together.

The probability of something with a chance of 1/1000 happening 350 times to a single individual would be  $(1/1,000)^{350}$ , or one out of  $10^{1,150}$ .

Thus the probability that Jesus Christ was not sent by God under these very conservative assumptions would be one in  $10^{1,150}$ .

This is an extremely conservative estimate. The chances are really much lower than this.

What are these chances like?

First, they're well beyond 1 out of  $10^{50}$ , so they are well beyond the previously defined guideline for what is deemed scientifically possible.

Adapting our previous analogy, a model for this probability would be:

What if for every atom of the universe, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion years, and for every one of these atoms formed, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion years, and for every one of these atoms formed, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion years, and for every one of these atoms formed, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion

years, and for every one of these atoms formed, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion years, and for every one of these atoms formed, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion years, and for every one of these atoms formed, there were a trillion-trillion universes forming a trillion-trillion times a second for the last trillion-trillion years, and then if I marked a single atom out of all these atoms, the chance of your picking it would be  $1/10^{1150}$ . Pretty well impossible.

This proves that Jesus was sent by God. It would be highly unreasonable to conclude otherwise.

Now that we know that Jesus was sent by God, we'd better listen to Him. What did Jesus say?

Jesus said:

*"I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me." John 14:6.*

*"... He who has seen Me has seen the Father..." John 14:9.*

*"I and My Father are one." John 10:30.*

*"I am the resurrection and the life. He who believes in Me, though he may die, he shall live. And whoever lives and believes in Me shall never die." John 11:25-27.*

*"I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved..." John 10:9.*

*"Most assuredly, I say to you, he who believes in Me has everlasting life." John 6:47.*

*"I am the bread of life." John 6:48.*

*"I am the vine, you are the branches. He who abides in Me, and I in him, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do*

*nothing. "If anyone does not abide in Me, he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned." John 15:5-6.*

*"I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End," says the Lord, "who is and who was and who is to come, the Almighty." Rev 1:8.*

Remember when Jesus was talking with the Samaritan woman at the well?

*"The woman said to Him, 'I know that Messiah is coming' (who is called Christ). 'When He comes, He will tell us all things.' Jesus said to her, 'I who speak to you am He.'" John 4:25-26.*

After Jesus had risen from the dead, He said:

*("...These are the words which I spoke to you while I was still with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Me." And He opened their understanding, that they might comprehend the Scriptures. Then He said to them, "Thus it is written, and thus it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from the dead the third day, and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in His name to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And you are witnesses of these things. Behold, I send the Promise of My Father upon you; but tarry in the city of Jerusalem until you are endued with power from on high. And He led them out as far as Bethany, and He lifted up His hands and blessed them. Now it came to pass, while He blessed them, that He was parted from them and carried up into heaven. And they worshiped Him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy, and were continually in the temple praising and blessing God. Amen. Luke 24:44-53.*

Jesus Christ is God come in the flesh, He was crucified so that our sins could be forgiven; if we turn from our sins and believe in Him and receive Him as Lord and Savior we will be saved and spend eternity with Him in

heaven. This is a fact that can be proven through prophecy and the science of probability. Again, it is way more reasonable to believe this than to not believe it. It requires more faith to not believe it than to believe it.

*Isa 1:18, Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool. (KJV)*

## **Conclusion**

If it's impossible for even a single cell to have come about by chance, then life did not come about by chance, as evolution states, and evolution is wrong.

If life did not come about by chance, then the only alternative is that it must have been created, as the Bible states, by a Creator God, and the Bible is right.

*Gen 1:1, "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." (KJV)*

*Ps 150:6, Let every thing that hath breath praise the LORD. Praise ye the LORD. (KJV)*

If it is impossible for Jesus not to have been what He claimed to be, then He is Who He claimed to be, the only Way whereby man must be saved, and we best listen to Him and His Word as given in the Bible.

*"I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me." John 14:6.*

*Acts 4:12, Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved. (KJV)*

**Will you receive Jesus Christ right now? Pray.**

*Dear Lord Jesus, I know that I am a sinner and need Your forgiveness. I believe that You died for my sins. I want to turn from my sins. I now invite You to come into my heart and life as my Lord and Savior. In Jesus' name. Amen.*

Welcome to the family of God!

## 11 Daniel's 70-Week Prophecy

### *The Most Amazing Prophecy in the Bible!*

Did you know that the day Jesus rode into Jerusalem on a donkey was predicted to the very day almost 500 years before it happened? The prophecy is found in Daniel 9:20-27.

The year was 539 B.C. Daniel had been in exile in Babylon for 66 years. Daniel was praying and the angel Gabriel appeared to him and gave him the prophecy.

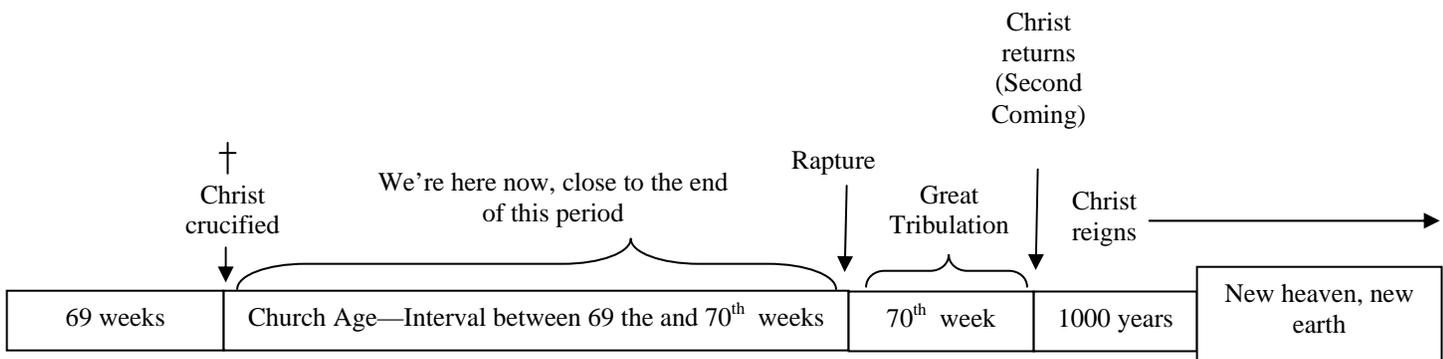
- **The Prophecy**
  - There would be 69 “weeks” (periods of 7 years) from the command to restore and build Jerusalem until Messiah (Jesus Christ) comes as Prince.
  
- **The Fulfillment of the Prophecy**
  - The command to restore and build Jerusalem came 94 years later, on March 14, 445 B.C., by the Persian king Artaxerxes Longimanus.
  - That means that 69 periods of 7-years later Jesus Christ would come as Prince.
    - A biblical year is 360 days.
    - 69 7-year periods of 360 days each is  $69 \times 7 \times 360$  days = 173,880 days.
  - If you add 173,880 days to March 14, 445 B.C. you come to April 6, 32 A.D., which is the very day Jesus rode into Jerusalem on a donkey, presenting Himself as King for the first time! (Other times, e.g., John 6, Jesus deliberately avoided the people's desire to make Him King.)
  - This was predicted to the very day almost 600 years before it happened!
  
- **What Comes Next? The Seventieth Week**
  - Daniel also prophesied about a 70<sup>th</sup> week, but between the 69<sup>th</sup> week and the 70<sup>th</sup> week there would be an interlude of time, the Church Age. After the church is removed by the rapture, the seventieth week takes place. It begins with a 7-year treaty

between the antichrist and Israel, includes the Great Tribulation (great destruction under antichrist), and ends with Jesus Christ's Second Coming.

- During Jesus' time, they didn't understand that He would be coming twice, first to die so that our sins could be forgiven (at the end of the 69<sup>th</sup> week) and second to conquer and reign as King (at the end of the 70<sup>th</sup> week). They thought when He first came He would come to rule as King.
- They also didn't understand that after the 69<sup>th</sup> week there would be an interval before the 70<sup>th</sup> week began. We are in that interval now, the Church Age. But the 70<sup>th</sup> week is fast approaching.

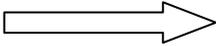
• **What's next?**

- After the 70<sup>th</sup> week comes the Millennial Kingdom, which is a 1000-year reign of Christ.
- After that come a final satanic rebellion, which is crushed by God.
- And then comes a new heaven and new earth in which Jesus Christ reigns forever. And all who are saved, who have received Jesus Christ, will be there. Have you received Jesus Christ?
- But the unsaved will be outside, in darkness, where there will be weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth.



## 12 Receive Jesus Now!

### *The Good News of Jesus Christ*

- **God loves you** and he wants to bless you.
- **The problem is that we all have sin in our life.**
  - Sin is disobedience to God.
    - The Bible says, "*For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.*" Romans 3:23.
- What is the result of sin?
  - **Sin results in not being able to go to heaven...unless we get rid of it!**
    - The Bible says, "*For the wages of sin is death...*" Romans 6:23.
- **How do we get rid of sin?**
  - **There is only one way.**  **Jesus Christ!**
    - The Bible says, "*Jesus said to him, 'I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.'*" John 14:6.
    - Jesus Christ was God who came down to earth in human form.
- **Jesus Christ died on the Cross so that our sins could be forgiven.**
- He rose from the grave three days later and is alive today!
- You can have your sins forgiven and go to heaven forever with Jesus if you:
  - Try your best to stop sinning (obey God)
  - Believe that Jesus Christ died for you on the Cross and rose alive from the grave
  - Invite Jesus Christ into your heart to rule your life.
    - The Bible says, "*Yet to all who received him, to those who believed in his name, he gave the right to become children of God.*" John 1:12
    - "*That if you confess with your mouth, 'Jesus is Lord,' and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved.*" Romans 10:9
    - "*Everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.*" Romans 10:13
- Will you receive Jesus Christ right now?
  - **Dear Lord Jesus, I know that I am a sinner and need Your forgiveness. I believe that You died for my sins. I want to turn from my sins. I now invite You to come into my heart and life as my Lord and Savior. In Jesus' name. Amen.**



To help you grow in Christ,

1. Read your Bible every day.
  2. Talk to God in prayer every day.
  3. Tell others about Jesus.
  4. Go to a Christian church.
  5. Help others.
- The Bible says, "**For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.**" **John 3:16**

